KIM JONG SUK BIOGRAPHY

KIM JONG SUK

BIOGRAPHY

FOREIGN LANGUAGES PUBLISHING HOUSE
PYONGYANG, KOREA
JUCHE 91 (2002)





Kim Jong Suk's native home in Hoeryong



Kim Jong Suk posing with Kim Il Sung in the days of the anti-Japanese armed struggle



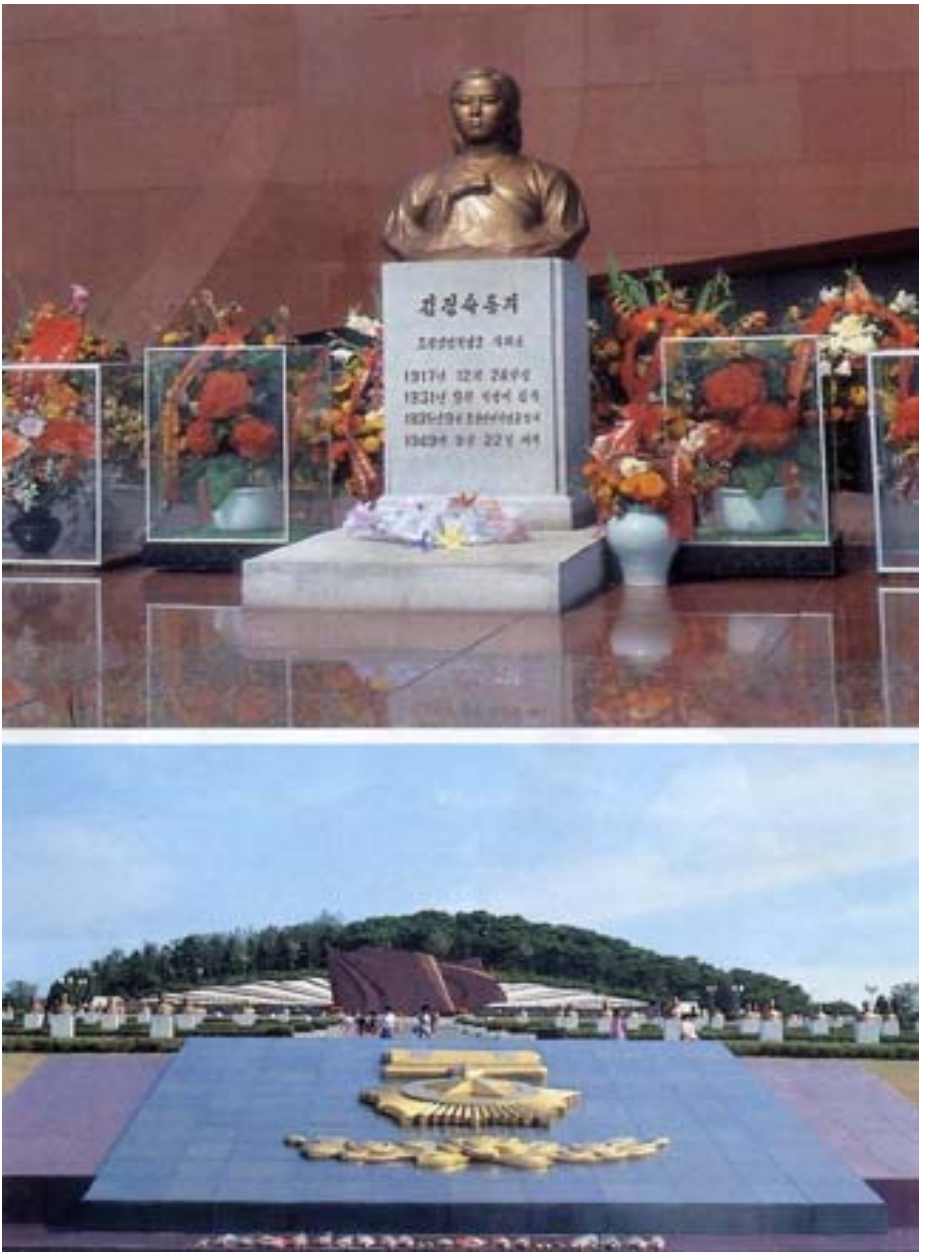
Kim Jong Suk with Kim Il Sung and their son Kim Jong Il



Kim Jong Suk attending the graduation ceremony of the second term of the Central Military Academy No. 1 with Kim Il Sung and Kim Jong Il



Kim Jong Suk casting a ballot at a people's power organ election



The Revolutionary Martyrs Cemetery

FOREWORD

Kim Jong Suk was an indomitable revolutionary fighter and an anti-Japanese war heroine. She dedicated herself heart and soul to the cause of national liberation and the victory of the revolution.

She protected the great leader Comrade Kim Il Sung at the risk of her own life and ensured that the Korean revolution advanced victoriously under his leadership. With her uncommon intelligence, unbreakable will and outstanding ability to lead people, she assisted Kim Il Sung in winning the great war against the Japanese aggressors, and made a pre-eminent contribution to the building of a new country.

Kim Jong Suk was a revolutionary paragon of love for her comrades and the people, the spirit of devoted service for them, and thrift and simplicity.

In the years of raging battle against the Japanese, she brought up Kim Jong Il to carry forward the Juche revolutionary cause pioneered by Kim Il Sung.

For her noble ideology and her imperishable revolutionary achievements for the country and the people, Kim Jong Suk will live eternally in the minds of the Korean people as Kim Il Sung's bodyguard, as an anti-Japanese war heroine, as a pre-eminent political worker and as a great mother of the revolution. Her name shines brilliantly in the modern history of Korea.

On the 85th anniversary of her birth, we are proud to publish "Kim Jong Suk, a Biography".

December Juche 91 (2002)

CONTENTS

1. GROWING UP AMID HARDSHIPS……. 5

Childhood……..5
The First Step of Struggle……....13

2. YOUNG VANGUARD……...21

Leader of the Children's Corps……21
With the Art Troupe……30
Standard-bearer in the Guerrilla Zone……37
Her Wish Is Realized……...42
At Chechangzi……48

3. WOMAN GENERAL OF PAEKTU……..59

Joining the KPRA……59
In Maanshan……66
Spring in Manjiang……..73
Her Distinguished Services in Fusong……77
The Secret Camp on Mt. Paektu……..81

4. IN THE ENEMY AREAS……...91

In Taoquanli……91
"The Sinpha Route"……98
The Special Envoy……105
A Letter from Prison……..114

5. IN THE TEETH OF GRIM TRIALS……124

Let Not the Deaths of Comrades-in-Arms Be in Vain……..124
To Meet Again the Fighters in the Homeland……...131
The Qingfeng Secret Camp 142
Song of Victory over Musan 154

6. IN THE AREAS NORTHEAST OF MT. PAEKTU 162

The New Theatre of War on the Bank of the Tuman River 162
600 Uniforms…….167
During the Large-Unit Circling Operations……..175
Becoming a Human Fortress and Shield……...183

7. THE CONVICTION OF VICTORY……187

In the Wake of the Xiaohaerbaling Conference……187
Greeting the Spring in a Foreign Land……..194
At the Paektusan Secret Camp Again……200
The Birth of Kim Jong Il, Son of Mt. Paektu……207

8. IN ANTICIPATION OF THE FINAL CAMPAIGN……215

Military and Political Training in the Training Base…….215
Famous Crack Shot……218
The Final Campaign……222

9. TRIUMPHAL RETURN TO HOMELAND……230

In the Liberated Homeland……230
Jubilation at Mangyongdae……245

10. ALERT AS EVER……..253

Always a Bodyguard……..253
Immortal Paean……...263

11. FOR THE REHABILITATION OF THE COUNTRY……..268

In Support of the Line Advanced by Kim Il Sung……..268
Taking the Lead in the General Ideological Mobilization Movement for Nation Building……..283
To Solve the Women's Question……293
Let Us Give the Younger Generation a Good Educatio….311
Immortal Contributions to Army Building…….322
Primary Concern for Korea's Reunification……...336

12. LOFTY FEELINGS OF OBLIGATION AND AFFECTIO N…352

With the Bereaved Children of the Revolutionary Martyrs…….352
Noble Virtue……...362

13. BRINGING UP HER SON AS KIM IL SUNG'S SUCCESSOR...377

Rearing Young Kim Jong Il as the Son of Mt. Paektu…...377
Though He Was the Son of Kim Il Sung……387

1. GROWING UP AMID HARDSHIPS

CHILDHOOD

Kim Jong Suk was born of peasant parents, Kim Chun San and O Ssi, at Osan-dong, Hoeryong Sub-county, Hoeryong County, (now Tongmyong-dong, Hoeryong City), North Hamgyong Province, on December 24, Juche 6[1] (1917).

Her family had moved from place to place, being mistreated and exploited by landowners. In 1895, in her grandfather's time, they had settled down in Hoeryong. Here too, they had to live in poverty as share-croppers. After her grandfather's death, they became worse off, under the burden of increasing debts, because her father, the pillar of the family, was frequently away from home working for the independence movement.

Just before Kim Jong Suk was born, the family, unable to pay back its debts, lost its share-cropping land and its thatched cottage was pulled down. They had to live in a room in another family's house on Osan Hill.

After passing the winter in the borrowed room, her father built a lean-to that adjoined the room. Kim Jong Suk was born in the lean-to.

The Japanese imperialists, who had occupied Korea, resorted to military rule, shooting, burning or burying innocent Koreans alive.

The Koreans suffered all these atrocities, and the whole country was reduced to a prison. The people's wailing over the loss of

national sovereignty reverberated everywhere, and the blood of Koreans soaked their own land. The Korean people stood up to fight against the Japanese.

In these years of national suffering, Kim Jong Suk's family also fought bravely against the Japanese aggressors, for the country and the people.

Her grandfather had participated in a peasant uprising against Korea's feudal rulers, but the patriotic cause failed, and he died in 1908. Her father was engaged in the independence movement against the Japanese for many years, crossing and recrossing the Tuman River (that flows between Korea and China-Tr.). The patriot died in a foreign land in 1929. Her mother helped her husband in his patriotic struggle, bringing up her children to be patriots and revolutionaries. She was killed by Japanese "punitive" troops in July 1932. Kim Jong Suk's elder brother Kim Ki Jun was an efficient underground operative. He was killed by the enemy in 1934 while fighting to carry out Kim Il Sung's Juche-oriented revolutionary line. Her younger brother Kim Ki Song was a member of the Children's Corps (CC), and was also unfailingly loyal to Kim Il Sung. The young revolutionary fighter laid down his life in the struggle for the country's liberation.

This patriotic and revolutionary family background motivated Kim Jong Suk from her early years to grow up into a great revolutionary. Her early years were spent in Hoeryong. Although the town had long been known as a scenic place, she had no opportunity to romp and play. She had to learn to pick herbs, glean and weed with a hoe, the handle of which was stained with her mother's sweat, not how to play housekeeping.

Her mother, despite her poverty, always taught her children respect for morals.

From her childhood, Kim Jong Suk gave thought more to the welfare of her parents and brothers, and her neighbours than to herself. Once, while fetching water from a well for her mother

working in a field, she tripped over a stone and broke the earthenware jar, which her mother had brought with her as part of her dowry. A few days later, she called at the local kiln, which hired village women for temporary work and paid them with earthenware jars. Kim Jong Suk, however, was too young to get a job there. Regretfully turning away, she saw that one of the women working there had a crying baby on her back. Feeling pity for the woman, she took the baby from its mother and cared for it till noon.

When the work was over, the shop-owner gave a few earthenware vessels to each of the women. The baby's mother came over to Kim Jong Suk, thanked her sincerely, and offered her an earthenware jar.

The small jar is still preserved in the kitchen of her old home in Hoeryong.

Unable to pay back the accumulated debts, Kim Jong Suk's family was forced to give up share-cropping. To make matters worse, the police harassed her family frequently because of her father who was working for the independence of the country.

Deprived of their livelihood in the homeland, her family crossed the Tuman River into China in the spring of 1922. Aboard the ferry, Kim Jong Suk gazed in tears at her dear hometown as it faded into the distance.

In recollection of the sad event, she said in later years:

"I never lost the memory of my hometown after I left it. At every moment of joy or sorrow, fighting under the General's command, I thought of my hometown Hoeryong. When on a march or in battle, I felt a little easier, but whenever I looked up at the moon shining on the camp in the forest, the trees, grass and pebbles of Hoeryong swam before my eyes."

Her family took up residence at Beigou, Yanji County, Northeast China. They moved into a deserted hut, and began share-cropping once more. All the family worked hard, but they could not keep the wolf from the door. Although they were

poverty-stricken, as they had been in Hoeryong, they always lived in harmony. All her neighbours respected this family, the members of which were hard working and good-natured.

Kim Jong Suk, though still a child, worked in the field with her mother and her elder brother by day, and made thread from flax and wove cloth at night by the light of a pine torch.

One day, Kim Jong Suk went to pick edible herbs on a nearby hill early in the morning. When she was returning home towards evening with the herbs she had picked, she heard the crying of a baby from a hut at the foot of the hill. It sounded so pitiable that she entered the hut, to find a young woman ill in bed with her crying baby sucking at her breasts that had run dry. Kim Jong Suk lifted the baby onto her back and, lulling it to sleep, cooked gruel with her herbs, and served it to the woman. She even prepared the woman's meal for the next morning with the remainder of the herbs, before returning home with an empty basket.

Learning this, her neighbours praised her, saying that the younger daughter of the family from Hoeryong was more kindly than grown-ups.

In the spring of the year when she reached the age of ten, her elder sister Kim Kwiinnyo was made the servant of a landowner because her family was unable to pay back the debts they owed to him.

When the landowner and his sons came to take her elder sister away, she cried, refusing to go with them to the landowner's. , her mother and elder brother Kim Ki Jun were injured trying to protect their sister, in vain. This tragic event left an unhealing wound in Kim Jong Suk's heart.

Not satisfied with this, the landowner deprived her family of the rented land, the only means of their living, and instigated the police to watch her father and search her home frequently.

Her family, having lost their livelihood in Beigou, moved to Xishanli, a mountain village, a little more than a mile from Badaogou, in the spring of 1928.

In the new place, their standard of living went from bad to worse. Her father was laid up with illness, her crippled elder brother was unable to work properly, and her sister-in-law was suffering from a disease after childbirth.

Kim Jong Suk began to realize, already in her childhood, the nature of the contradictions of the exploitative society that brought her misery and sorrow. She felt hatred for the Japanese imperialists and her class enemies. Especially, her father's dying words implanted in her mind love for the homeland, and the idea of fighting against the Japanese and for the liberation of the homeland.

"I wanted to be buried in Korea," he said. "I wanted to become Korean earth when I decayed. But even this wish is not going to be fulfilled. Wherever you are, you must not forget your hometown, must not forget Korea, and must fight for Korea."

After her father's death, her family moved to the village of Xiacun, Fuyandong, Yanji County, in June 1929. There they share-cropped for landowner Ri Chun Phal. Soon, her mother, who had supported the family, became bedridden, and all the burden of domestic duties for the large family weighed on Kim Jong Suk's young shoulders. All her neighbours pitied her for the heavy burden on her small shoulders in the rough world where even robust men found it hard to get by.

Amid these untold hardships, however, she showed no sign of gloom or pessimism; she managed the household affairs, inspiring her family with her diligence, warm love for them and bright smiles.

In those days, there was a small private school in Xiacun, attended by fifty to sixty pupils from poor families in Fuyandong and neighbouring villages. Although Kim Jong Suk herself was

not in a position to go to school again because of her family circumstances, she wanted to send her younger brother to school. When this wish came true, she was happier than her brother himself. New clothes were not available for her brother, but she dressed him with newly washed clothes and wrapped his books in a sheet of cloth for him.

She herself wished to learn. The stronger her desire to learn, the more bitter was the resentment she felt at the heartless world which denied her a decent life and an opportunity of learning.

Her ardent wish for education was not realized until the summer of 1930. The political operatives, who had been sent to urban and rural areas in support of Kim Il Sung's idea, set up night schools and formed revolutionary organizations wherever they were active, and worked hard to bring the ordinary people to political awareness to build a mass foundation for the revolution. In the course of this, a night school was established in Fuyangdong as well, and Kwak Chan Yong, a teacher at the private school, taught at the night school. He was engaged in anti-Japanese patriotic enlightenment as a member of the revolutionary organization formed by the young communists dispatched by Kim Il Sung.

Kim Jong Suk was the first to enroll at the night school when it opened. Recollecting her joy on that occasion to her comrades of the anti-Japanese guerrilla army in later years, she said:

"How grateful I was at the news that the night school had been opened! ... That was the first gratitude I had felt in my life. I was so happy that I shed tears holding onto the edge of the blackboard."

The teacher spoke, clenching fists to his pupils: "Knowledge is power; illiteracy will ruin us. So you must have knowledge. The learned are in duty bound to teach, and the illiterate have the right to learn. ... Study as hard as you can!"

Back at home that night, Kim Jong Suk could not sleep. The fact that there were kind people who were sympathetic to the poor in that cruel world excited her immensely.

Rim Chun Chu², an anti-Japanese revolutionary veteran, later said in recollection of her in those days:

"Comrade Kim Jong Suk looked much more developed than her age in those days. She was clever and well-behaved, and eager to learn, more than any other pupil. She was the first to come to night school when it opened, and was never absent from the class."

The night school taught the Korean language and arithmetic in the main but it also told the pupils stories. Of the many stories told there, the legendary tale of Kim Il Sung moved the pupils deepest.

"The morning star that has risen in the night sky over Korea sparkles luminously all over the world," and "The man who illumines the world like the morning star is cultivating the art of war, speeding over mountains, to destroy the Japanese at a stroke of his sword. When he comes to fight in command of his army, Korea will win its independence."

Hearing this tale, Kim Jong Suk most ardently wished that the hero of the legend were a real man, and dreamed herself fighting under his command against the Japanese, landowners and capitalists.

Kim Jong Suk studied with great enthusiasm at the night school. She advised those of her friends who were hesitant to come to the school, saying that women, too, should learn how to read and write so that they could see clearly the injustices in society and get rid of outdated feudal ideas.

The revolutionary organizations enlightened the masses by availing themselves of various folk events and ceremonial occasions. Especially in Fuyandong, a traditional autumn party, to which each of the village women contributed her share of the food, was made a gathering where the women were inspired with hopes for the future and encouraged to develop revolutionary enthusiasm.

This gathering which was resented by the local landowner, however, gave him a chance to bring unexpected misfortune to Kim Jong Suk's family.

As the women of Fuyangdong were preparing for the party that year, it happened that every family was short of food grain as it occurred before the harvest. Besides, Kim Jong Suk's family had just held the funeral of her grandmother so it had no cereal to contribute to the party.

In this situation, Kim Jong Suk's brother went to the share-cropping field and cut several ripe ears of sorghum. When the landowner learned about this, he came to Kim Jong Suk's house and hurled abuse at the family, branding them as thieves, and threatening them to have the law on them.

"How can you blame us for stealing, when we only picked a few ears of the crop we had grown ourselves?" Kim Jong Suk retorted.

Enraged at what he called her disrespect for the owner of the land, the landlord demanded that one of her family should turn his millstone during the winter unless they paid their debts right away. He roared that, otherwise, he would have their house pulled down, stop renting out the farm land to them, and make her younger brother a fodder-cutter for his cattle.

Unable to suppress her resentment, Kim Jong Suk threw herself into her mother's arms and burst into tears.

As a last resort, she, though too young for such work, decided to go herself to the landowner's and turn his millstone. She dared not let her dear mother or her sister-in-law work under the yoke of slavery, still less allow her younger brother to become a servant for the landowner.

The mill stood at a corner of the landowner's yard. Whenever the mill stopped working, even for a minute, the landowner came out, and shouted at Kim Jong Suk. In these circumstances, her thirteenth birthday came round. That day her mother and younger

brother came to the mill with a bundle of food. The mother felt that it was so pitiable to see her daughter working under the yoke even on her birthday that she unwrapped the bundle for her daughter, and then took up the yoke of the millstone with her son.

Holding their hands in hers, however, Kim Jong Suk said:

"Please don't, mother. Why should you, too, turn the millstone? If you clean some rice for the landowner, will it change the lot of our family? It will hurt me so much more. ..."

After sending her mother and brother back home, she again took up the yoke of the millstone. She felt that it would be impossible to be free from poverty and disgrace in such a world, and firmly resolved to fight against injustice to the end.

THE FIRST STEP OF STRUGGLE

Early in 1931, the Japanese imperialists' ambition to occupy Manchuria became transparent, and war was imminent in that part of the world.

Meanwhile, the Korean people's resistance to Japanese fascist rule developed into a violent mass struggle.

Kim Il Sung, who set forth the line of armed struggle against the Japanese at the Kalun meeting, moved to the area of the Tuman River in order to make preparations for the armed struggle, and worked hard to rally the broad masses of the people into the revolutionary ranks.

The atmosphere of revolution also enveloped Fuyandong. Political operatives who had been dispatched there by Kim Il Sung formed the Anti-Imperialist Union (AIU), Peasants Association, Revolutionary Mutual Aid Society[3], Women's Association and

other revolutionary organizations in that area by enlisting the masses into them.

In those days, Kim Ki Jun was a hard-core member of the AIU. His family did not know this, but Kim Jong Suk sensed that her elder brother was working by night for a great cause. She believed that he was treading the path of struggle to win back the lost country, and resolved to follow suit.

The Young Communist League (YCL) gave an assignment to the night-school teacher to train Kim Jong Suk into a regular revolutionary through practical struggle. With her teacher's help, Kim Jong Suk realized that it was Kim Il Sung who was giving leadership to the Korean revolution. His noble name which symbolized the cherished desire of the entire nation was firmly imprinted in her memory. She imagined the man to whom the name belonged, and believed that he would win back the lost country for the nation, provide the Korean people with a new world free from exploitation and oppression, destroy the Japanese marauders and put right the evils of society. She determined to fight all her life along the road indicated by him.

One spring day in 1931, Kim Jong Suk turned up at a rendezvous at the foot of Mt. Nan, in excitement to receive an assignment from the revolutionary organization for the first time in her life. From a shady thicket, her night-school teacher appeared. Some distance away, Kim Ki Jun was standing. Her heart throbbed with a feeling of respect for her brother and pride in having such a brother, as well as her delight and pride in herself for following the path he had taken.

She received an assignment to scatter leaflets of a written appeal in her village and at places where many people would gather. She stole through the village in the darkness of night to carry out the assignment.

Next morning, the whole village found itself in great excitement to see the leaflets scattered all over their yards and the roads; one was even pasted on the gate of the landowner's house.

After this success, she was frequently given similar missions and other important missions to relay secret messages and carried them out with success. To avoid the enemy's watchful eyes, she disguised herself as a peasant girl going to sell edible herbs, like a girl going to school or as if she and her younger brother were going to visit relatives. Members of the organization marveled at her wits, audacity and resourcefulness.

Having learned the truth of revolution and developed the will and resourcefulness of a true revolutionary, she was admitted on September 12, 1931 to the Children's Vanguard (CV), a paramilitary organization of young people and children formed by Kim Il Sung. This meant the beginning of a new life for, an important first step in the ranks of struggle in loyal support of the leadership of Kim Il Sung.

On September 18 the same year, several days after her admission into the CV, the so-called Manchurian Incident broke out. The Japanese imperialists hatched a plot in which they blew up a section of the railway line at Liutiaogou, west of Beidaying, Shenyang, in Northeast China. The railway was owned by the Japanese Manchurian Railway Company. The Japanese then used this as a pretext to invade Manchuria, and, in the name of maintaining "security in the rear," stepped up their reactionary offensive against the Korean people. Their repression and atrocities were rampant, especially in eastern Manchuria and other areas of Korean settlement where new revolutionary forces were quickly growing.

In view of this situation, Kim Il Sung set the task of accelerating the preparations for armed struggle at a meeting of cadres of the party and YCL held in Ounhua in late September and

at other meetings. He also led the work of training and increasing the revolutionary forces in a militant way.

Under the guidance of political operatives sent by Kim Il Sung, the revolutionary organization in Fuyandong also called a meeting of the villagers to expose the aggressive nature of the Japanese imperialists, who had provoked the Manchurian Incident, and to rouse the masses to struggle. The playground of the school where the meeting was held was bright with torchlights and bonfires, which blazed deep into the night.

At the meeting, Kim Jong Suk took the floor following the speeches made by some young people on the authority of the revolutionary organization. At that moment, the audience murmured with surprise. They had never seen a woman - and a fourteen-year-old girl at that -- addressing such a mass rally.

Her speech, however, touched the hearts of the audience at once.

"Fathers, mothers, brothers and sisters!" she said. "The Japanese imperialist aggressors who are occupying our country have recently concocted the Manchurian Incident and started a large-scale invasion. ...

"Why should our old parents perish with bitterness in their hearts in this rough foreign land without seeing their beloved homeland? Why should our young people wither away, shedding tears and blood in the midst of these hardships? What is the cause of all these miseries, and who are to blame for these misfortunes? It is the Japanese marauders occupying our country and the fiendish landowners who are to blame.

"They are our sworn enemies. Without destroying them, none of us will be able to live in peace. Let all of us turn out as one, in the fight against the Japanese imperialists."

Roused by her speech, the people shouted, raising clenched fists: "Down with the Japanese imperialists and the wicked landowners!" They marched as far as Cangcaicun, waving burning torches and singing revolutionary songs.

Through the struggle, Kim Jong Suk became widely known to the people in Badaogou. In the autumn of that year, a violent mass struggle, the "harvest struggle," was waged under the leadership of Kim Il Sung against the Japanese imperialists and wicked landowners in the wide area of eastern Manchuria. Prior to the "harvest struggle," the revolutionary organization in Fuyandong formed a struggle committee and organized a propaganda squad, pickets, a stooge liquidation squad and a slogan-shouting squad.

Kim Jong Suk belonged to the propaganda squad.

One day, when she was working with women who were harvesting foxtail millet by the custom of lending a hand to each other, she put ten sheaves of foxtail millet side by side with each other and lifted three of them, explaining that the three sheaves were for the landowner, that the seven other sheaves were for the sharecropper, and that that was the 3:7 sharecropping system to be introduced for them. The women had heard about the 3:7 system and the 4:6 system on several occasions, but only then were they convinced of the need for the 3:7 system, thanks to this object lesson.

"That's why we must win the struggle," Kim Jong Suk emphasized. "To win, we must unite. No matter how wildly they oppress us, we shall have nothing to fear if only we peasants join together as one. No force in the world will be able to defeat us. So let us unite and fight."

Her confident words inspired the women with strength and enthusiasm for struggle. Day and night, she enlightened the people, visiting the neighbouring villages of Zhongcun, Shangcun, Cangcaicun, Donggu, and so on. As a result, not only the men but also the women, old people and even children of Fuyandong turned out in the "harvest struggle."

Kim Jong Suk also performed picket duty at the head of the CV and the CC.

When the villagers of Fuyandong marched to the house of the landowner Ri Chun Phal, shouting slogans and singing songs, the latter refused to accept the 3:7 system on any account. Seeing the landowner so enraged, some of the villagers showed signs of wavering.

At this moment, Kim Jong Suk explained to them how the wicked landowner was bleeding the peasants white and how he was committing crimes against them. Her words stimulated the villagers' pent-up anger to explosion point.

A forest of sticks, hoes, rakes and sickles raised by the peasants threatened the landowner, who was brought to his knees. The sharecroppers of Fuyandong won their share of 70% of the harvest.

When eastern Manchuria was bubbling over in the atmosphere of success following the "harvest struggle" and the "spring uprising,"[4] there came more exciting news: Kim Il Sung had founded the Anti-Japanese People's Guerrilla Army (AJPGA) at Antu on April 25, Juche 21 (1932).

At the news, Kim Jong Suk's heart beat hard. When her father was alive, she had asked him whether women could become soldiers. Her father had answered, "Of course, women can become soldiers fighting for the independence of the country, for they love the country and hate the enemy as much as men do."

Alarmed at the soaring revolutionary spirit of the people and the anti-Japanese guerrillas that had appeared in all parts of eastern Manchuria, the Japanese imperialists tried to squash the revolutionary forces in the cradle. Blustering that if they killed a hundred Koreans, at least one of the massacred would be a Communist or a member of the YCL, they drowned the whole land of Jiandao in a bloodbath, and burnt down everything.

The massacre of the Koreans in Jiandao left a wound in Kim Jong Suk's heart, a wound that would never heal up.

On the morning of July 15 that year, Kim Jong Suk was guiding a meeting of the CC on a hill. Suddenly she heard dogs barking,

followed by gunshots from the village. The Japanese "punitive" troops had assaulted the village. In an instant, the village was enveloped in flames, in the midst of a pandemonium of gunshots, loud screams and horses' neighing in the valley of Fuyandong. The Japanese atrocities were appalling. A large number of people were murdered.

When Kim Jong Suk arrived at her burning house, her sister-in-law had already stopped breathing, and her mother had fallen with serious burns. Her mother, scarcely coming to herself, held her daughter's hand in hers and said, "Jong Suk, ... your sister-in-law was calling your name even while dying in the flames... asking you to bring up your nephew for her. ... To convey her request to you I. ... I wanted to see with my own eyes the ruin of those fiendish Japanese." Her mother went on, gathering all her fading strength: "Take revenge on the enemy for me."

Kim Jong Suk's mother died, leaving behind her this request and the cruel world. The death of her mother and her sister-in-law grieved her young heart beyond endurance.

One day in later years, Kim Jong Suk recollected this tragic event to a comrade in the revolution, saying, "Mother's death shocked me too hard to shed tears. The thought of bringing up my infant nephew in this harsh world dazed me as if the sky had fallen in, as if the earth had sunk into an abyss. Neither crying nor writhing seemed to lead me out of my despair, but the consciousness of the revolution helped me to rise.

"With determination to fight stoutly for the revolution under General Kim Il Sung's leadership, I stood up again with fresh hope, in spite of this tragic event."

Kim Jong Suk resolutely pulled herself together, holding in her arms her younger brother, who was wailing before his mother's grave. Unyielding struggle and punishing the enemy without mercy was the only way to wreak vengeance for the deaths of her parents and other family members.

On July 25, ten days after the death of her mother and her sister-in-law, Kim Jong Suk joined the Young Communist League of Korea led by Kim Il Sung.

That day she took a solemn oath before the YCL:

"Joining the glorious Young Communist League, I pledge to dedicate myself, body and mind, to the struggle for the victory of the revolution, cherishing the honour and pride of membership of the League.

"I will strictly observe the discipline of the organization to prove myself worthy of being a member of the Young Communist League, will faithfully implement the decisions and directives of the organization, and will contribute to developing the League into a militant revolutionary organization. ...

"I will be an example for the masses in life and struggle, and will always take the lead, standing in the van of the Korean revolution."

2. YOUNG VANGUARD

LEADER OF THE CHILDREN'S CORPS

Following the foundation of the AJPGA, the first revolutionary armed force of the Korean people, Kim Il Sung set the task of organizing a guerrilla base in the form of a liberated zone in May 1932, in order to protect the young guerrilla army and the revolutionary masses from the enemy's attacks, and quickly increase and strengthen the revolutionary forces.

As part of the effort, a guerrilla zone was established in Shangcun, Fuyan, and the revolutionary masses from the neighbouring villages started to move, collectively or individually, to the newly established guerrilla zone.

Kim Jong Suk and her younger brother determined to move to the guerrilla zone in the autumn of that year. She had to part from her elder brother and her nephew, whom she had been bringing up with all her care. She had had to pay visits to far-off villages everyday to beg for milk for the baby. When refused sometimes, she had had to turn round with tears in her eyes. More than once, she had had to lull the hungry, crying baby all night, with tears in her own eyes.

Till the very moment of leaving for the guerrilla zone, she was thinking of taking the baby with her. Her elder brother Kim Ki Jun, however, did not agree with the idea. When she was stepping out of her house, her nephew burst out crying. Despite Kim Ki Jun's

efforts to soothe it, it continued crying and writhing. Heartbroken, Kim Jong Suk went back into the room, unable to start off that night. The next day, the enemy's "punitive" troops assaulted the village again. Kim Jong Suk quickly climbed up a nearby hill with her nephew in her arms. She meant to go straight to the guerrilla zone, taking her nephew with her.

Her brother ran after her, almost out of breath, and said to her: "You're not yet fully determined to fight for the revolution. If you are going to be a revolutionary, you must first think of the revolution. If you worry about your family, how can you make a revolution? Don't worry about the family. ... Go and fight!" With these words he took back the baby and climbed down the valley. The child's crying echoed through the valley, marking this eternal farewell between, the brother who must have shed tears of blood hugging his son struggling not to be parted from his aunt, and the sister who had to go to the guerrilla zone hearing the heart-trending cry of her dear nephew, both taking the path of struggle, ready to sacrifice their family and everything else for the revolution.

The conditions in the newly established guerrilla zone were very hard. So many people from Xiacun and Zhongcun in Fuyan, and other neighbouring villages came to the guerrilla zone that there was not enough food and housing for them. To make matters worse, the enemy made "punitive" attacks on them on a large scale to nip the guerrilla zone in the bud.

Kim Jong Suk began to work at dawn every day. She got up earlier than everyone else. When she was sweeping the yard and the road, she used to hear the reveille sounded by Kim Ki Song, the bugler of the CC. When the CC members got up at the bugle signal and gathered on the hilltop, she would line them up and guide their morning exercises.

After the guidance of the children's class work and their activities after school, she would proceed to Donggou or

Cangcaicun to do political work among the villagers, an assignment given to her by the district committee of the YCL. Sometimes she took some of the CV members to the enemy area on reconnaissance missions, and took part in battles, helping the guerrillas destroy the enemy's "punitive" forces. Hurrying about here and there every day, she often had to skip a meal. She bore all this, however, without any sign of fatigue.

Wherever she went, the master of the house where she stayed in those days said in recollection, Kim Jong Suk was always on the run. Once she did not return home till late at night, so the host went out to see what was wrong with her, only to find her washing the clothes of guerrillas at the riverside, even forgetting to have her supper. Holding and feeling her wet hands in his, the host was surprised at how coarse they were. Although her hands were severely chapped and calloused, she endured the pain with a sense of pride in working honourably in the cause of the revolution in the guerrilla zone, the people's world.

The cheerful lives of the people and the happiness of the children singing and going to school in the guerrilla zone, she said to her host, were something that could not be imagined in the world ruled by the Japanese imperialists....

"We must work hard to safeguard this freedom and this happiness which the General gave us," she said. "I believe that there is no greater honour and greater happiness than safeguarding them."

Soon after she moved to Shangcun, in the Fuyan guerrilla zone, Kim Jong Suk was elected to the District No.8 Committee of the YCL. The League assigned to her the responsibility of directing the work of the CC in the District No.8. This was an important undertaking, for it involved raising the children to be reliable heirs to the revolution.

As district leader of the CC, Kim Jong Suk began her work by acquainting herself in detail with the actual situation of the CC in the district.

On November 5 that year, a meeting of the CC in the Fuyan guerrilla zone was called at the office of the District Committee of the YCL in Shangcun. At the meeting, Kim Jong Suk, on the basis of the information she had obtained since her appointment, made a report on the need to enhance the role of the instructors of the CC in countering the blockade of the guerrilla zone by the Japanese imperialists.

In her report, she dwelt on the situation of the guerrilla zone, analyzed the shortcomings in the work of the CC, and set the task of improving its work in the immediate period ahead as well as the method of carrying it out. She pointed out the inefficient operation of the CC school and the cause of the inefficiency, and emphasized that the instructors should enhance their role and sense of responsibility, and improve the operation of the school.

She also set various other tasks such as improving the organization of art troupe activities and support for the guerrillas, strengthening the guidance of the organizational life of the CC, and the tasks for the CC instructors.

Her report was followed by the speeches made by the instructors.

The meeting enlivened the work of the CC in the guerrilla zone. The role and the sense of responsibility of the instructors were enhanced, and order was established in the work of the CC in the guerrilla zone.

There were many children in the guerrilla zone whom the revolutionary organization had to look after. Most of them were orphans or revolutionary martyrs' children who had come to the guerrilla zone after their parents had been killed by the Japanese "punitive" force.

Kim Jong Suk talked to the children every day about General Kim Il Sung, nurturing loyalty to the General in their minds. She took every opportunity to talk to the children about their beautiful homeland and its rich natural resources, the history of the Korean people's courageous struggle against invaders, their resplendent national culture, the miseries and sufferings of the Koreans caused by exploitation and oppression by the Japanese imperialists. She inculcated love for the country in the children's minds and inspired them with hope for the future.

Kim Jong Suk also hardened the children through the revolutionary struggle. Revolutionary practice is a school for training people as revolutionaries, she said and emphasized that only when the children were hardened through work and struggle from their early years could they become true revolutionaries capable of breaking through all difficulties and trials.

She made sure that the children always kept parcels of scorched rice flour and salt, underwear, blankets, needles, matches wrapped in birch bark, notebooks and pencils in their knapsacks, with two clubs attached to the back of each of them. The CC members were not mere children, but young fighters who defended the guerrilla zone and the revolution with their lives.

The children sometimes carried ammunition to the trenches on embattled hills, and rolled down rocks upon the "punitive" troops who were climbing up the hills. They would also beat drums and sing revolutionary songs on the hills where fierce battles were taking place.

The Japanese invaders intensified their "punitive" operations, and at the same time tried to starve the people in the guerrilla zone by an economic blockade. They were helped by evil landlords, who came with dozens of farm hands and even ox-carts, and stole the crops from the fields of the people in the guerrilla zone.

All the people in the guerrilla zone set about harvesting their crops in a campaign against the marauders. Kim Jong Suk led the

members of the YCL, the CV and the CC to join in the harvest campaign in the fields between Zhongcun and Xiacun, even before daybreak.

One day, at about ten o'clock in the morning, Self-Defence Corps[5] men suddenly came, and attacked the harvesters. While the guerrillas were fighting back at the enemy, Kim Jong Suk helped the people take cover. At that moment, a landowner appeared with many farm hands and carts, and began to reap the crop.

Kim Jong Suk, the YCL members and the children climbed up a nearby hill, and rolled rocks down a sharp slope upon the enemy, who were firing rifles. Piles of rocks had been prepared in anticipation of the enemy's attack.

Encountering heavy fire from the guerrillas and harassed by the rocks tumbling down upon them, the Self-Defence Corps men began to run away. The landowner then loaded on his carts even the sheaves harvested by the people of the guerrilla zone, and withdrew too.

Kim Jong Suk led the young men and children via a shortcut to lie in ambush near the road. Soon after the Self-Defence Corps men passed the bend and disappeared, the convoy of ox-carts fully loaded with the harvested crop came in sight. As the convoy approached, the young men and children rushed out at her signal, with spears and clubs. Her eyes flashed at the sight of the landowner's face, for it was Ri Chun Phal.

"Comrades, that is the wicked landowner Ri Chun Phal," Kim Jong Suk shouted. "He has lived off the backbreaking labour of the peasants in Fuyandong, and is now trying to starve the people in the guerrilla zone. He's our inveterate enemy. Let's put him on trial by the masses!"

The CV members fell upon the resisting landowner, tied him with a rope and dragged him to the village in the guerrilla zone. The landowner's farm hands were given a good lesson and allowed to return home. In the village, a mass meeting was held to

try the landowner. The sworn enemy of Kim Jong Suk's family and the people of Fuyandong was severely punished in the name of the people. The news of the heroine of the YCL who had taken back the harvested crop from the enemy spread in the guerrilla zone and the neighbouring villages.

Kim Jong Suk always told the CC instructors to guide the organizational life of the children properly in order to train them to be revolutionaries, and paid close attention to this work.

One day, she paid a visit to the CC school in Donggou. The instructor of the school asked her what the basic task in the work of the school was and what the problem to be solved was in order to successfully carry out the task.

Kim Jong Suk explained that the most important task in the guidance of the school was to help the children to be good at class work, training and organizational life. She emphasized that this task must be carried out no matter how complex the situation was.

Kim Jong Suk looked after the children and people of the guerrilla zone as she would do her own flesh and blood. She would plunge into battle and flames, braving showers of bullets to save the children from danger.

A "punitive" force once surprised the guerrilla zone under cover of a snowstorm, and the battle was soon raging. Kim Jong Suk took the children to the top of a hill, and told them to beat drums and sing revolutionary songs to encourage the fighting guerrillas.

When the battle reached its height, one of the children slipped away from the ranks, and went down towards the enemy. The boy was found missing a few minutes later. He had often said that if he could capture a gun from the Japanese, he would wreak vengeance upon the enemy for the deaths of his parents.

Kim Jong Suk immediately ran down into the valley. She found the boy clambering through a snowdrift, chased by a soldier of the "punitive" force. The boy had been discovered while taking

a rifle off a dead enemy soldier. The boy was almost exhausted, and his pursuer almost upon him. Kim Jong Suk dodged behind a rock and waited until the soldier had passed. Then she leapt from her hiding place, and felled the enemy with two blows of a wooden club.

That was not the only instance of her saving a child in the guerrilla zone at the risk of her own life. In winter of the same year, on her way to Zhongbaogelazicun to spy on the enemy, she was discovered by the enemy. She lured the enemy to herself and saved the children who were accompanying her. At another time, she plunged into flames to rescue a child from a log-cabin which had been set on fire by "punitive" troops.

She gave her only cotton-padded coat to an old man who was shivering with cold. When people in the guerrilla zone were plagued with an epidemic, she nursed the patients with all her care although she herself was ill.

For her love for the children and people in the guerrilla zone and her self-sacrificing devotion to them, she was loved and respected by them.

At a meeting of the officials of the YCL held at Wangqing on March 27, 1933, General Kim Il Sung made a speech, titled, On the Tasks of Improving the Work of the Young Communist League.

In his speech, he analyzed the successes and shortcomings in the work of the YCL since the foundation of the AJPGA, pointed out the need to expand the YCL organization steadily by rejecting both Left and Right deviations in its organizational work, and conduct ideological education by various methods. He also instructed that giving responsible guidance to the work of the CC was an important guarantee for strengthening the YCL and the guerrilla army.

A meeting of leading officials of the YCL and the CC in Yanji County was held at Beidong, Wangougou in April the same year,

a meeting to discuss the measures to be taken to carry out the tasks set by General Kim Il Sung.

In her speech, Kim Jong Suk said that if the youth workers followed the General's instructions, nothing would be impossible for them, and everything would turn out successful. She also dwelt on the task of the CC instructors to bring up the CC members to be heirs to the revolution, as intended by the General.

The CC leaders, she emphasized, should be elder brothers and elder sisters of the children before being their instructors and teachers. Only then could they become educators and teachers whom the children would trust and follow wholeheartedly. ...

Every single word and every single gesture of theirs, she went on, should be an example to be followed by the children as well as a mirror of their behaviour.

Her speech roused warm sympathy in her audience. The speech was very impressive because it was based on her correct and profound understanding of the General's instructions and on the rich experience of her work.

On returning from the meeting, she did her YCL work and guided the CC with fresh hope and enthusiasm. She explained the General's instructions to the children and imprinted his teachings in their memory.

She worked hard every day, feeding and clothing the children, and taking care of them at all times. When firewood ran out, she would take the lead in gathering it in the mountains; when notebooks and pencils ran short, she herself would go to the enemy area to obtain them. She would wash the children's clothes or mend them till late at night after sending them to bed.

Although she took care of the children as a sister would do her younger brother or as a mother would do her children, she never turned a blind eye to their shortcomings. She attended every meeting to examine the children's characters, and summed up the performance of their duties, persuading them to correct their

mistakes, so that they acquired the qualities and qualifications of revolutionaries from childhood.

How well she raised the CC members was illustrated by a Japanese press report which said, "A twelve-year-old girl who was captured by the Japanese in the vicinity of Badaogou during the last 'punitive' operation had a dozen sheets of anti-war leaflets in the Japanese language hidden on her. When interrogated, she answered that she was going to show them to Japanese soldiers for the purpose of propaganda at the moment of her death."

The girl, Kum Sun by name, who was widely known to the Korean people and whose brave deeds had been reported by The Communist International, the magazine published by the Comintern, and by the Chinese Save-the-Nation News and other media in those days, had belonged to the art troupe of the CC in Yanji County.

The CC members who had been educated and trained by Kim Jong Suk with meticulous care became, without exception, well-qualified guerrillas and skilful political workers, and rendered distinguished services in the great war of national liberation. Among them were not only Kum Sun but also a large number of fighters who gave their precious lives without hesitation in support of General Kim Il Sung for the victory of the revolution and for the liberation of their country and fellow Koreans.

The training of these revolutionaries was an imperishable achievement made by Kim Jong Suk for the country and the people.

WITH THE ART TROUPE

Kim Jong Suk, guiding the work of the CC, paid close attention to the activities of art troupes, and devoted great efforts to this work.

She organized the first art troupe of the CC at its school in Cangcaicun. She prepared the performance programme and directed the rehearsals. She got the art troupe to perform the programme for the villagers of Cangcaicun on a number of occasions. The news of the performances quickly spread throughout the guerrilla zone and attracted great attention.

On the basis of this experience, she prepared the performance to be presented on the occasion of the New Year Day of 1933. The County Committee of the YCL decided to give the performance at Beidong, Wangougou, on the eve of the New Year Day. A large number of people from many villages packed the open ground where the performance was to take place.

As the curtain rose, Kim Jong Suk appeared on the stage, and made an important speech. "Seeing out the old year full of trials," she said, "we are seeing in a new year full of hope. In the past year, the Korean people started the great war against the Japanese, fighting through flames; united behind General Kim Il Sung in the new year they will give crushing blows to the Japanese imperialist aggressors." She called on her audience to advance in support of the General's line of revolution.

The *Maypole*[6] Kim Ki Song's harmonica solo, and many songs and dances were put on the stage. The performance enveloped the people of the guerrilla zone in an atmosphere of ecstasy.

The art troupe also gave a performance at the Badaogou mine in the enemy area. The performance had a large audience of workers. Choruses, vocal solos and dances were presented on the stage. At the end, Kim Jong Suk gave a rousing speech.

The workers saw a new world in the virile and lively performance of the art troupe of the CC. The stirring speech, and the revolutionary songs and dances performed by the children with flying red scarves in the spotlight of

dozens of miners' acetylene lamps inspired the workers with a determination to rise in the struggle by shaking off their sorrow and misery. Especially young workers were excited more than anyone else. "When even that young girl is fighting against the Japanese," they said, "how can we remain indifferent? We, too, must join the guerrilla army. Let us follow her to the mountains with explosives on our backs!" They volunteered to join the guerrilla army. Jo Jong Chol and Mun Pung Sang, who are well known for their prominent political and military activities in the Korean People's Revolutionary Army (KPRA), were young miners who went to the guerrilla zone at that time. Among the miners who went to the guerrilla zone was a young boy who had watched the performance with delight. Kim Jong Suk took the nameless boy to the guerrilla zone, named him Kim Kum San and raised him to be a stalwart CC member. The boy became Kim Ki Song's closest comrade, and followed Kim Jong Suk as he would follow his own sister. He grew up to be a KPRA soldier, a machine-gunner, and performed a heroic exploit in the battle to defend the Headquarters.

In June the same year, Kim Jong Suk organized the County Children's Corps Art Troupe, with approximately 20 children who had been selected from the CC schools.

In summer that year, the art troupe visited guerrilla companies, Anti-Japanese Self-Defence Corps units, hospitals, villages in the guerrilla zone, and even hamlets in the mountains to give performances.

Everywhere they went, the art troupe was received with love and a hearty welcome by the guerrillas and other people, not only because they staged fine performances, but also because they helped the guerrillas and other people in every way possible, and always behaved properly.

Once the art troupe visited a weapons repair shop. Anticipating the visit, Kim Jong Suk had got a sizable amount of scrap iron collected for the repair shop. The guerrillas at the repair shop, who were short of iron to make grenades, cheered at the sight of the precious scrap iron brought by the art troupe children.

Every item of the performance given that day won hearty applause, and greatly encouraged the audience. After the performance, the art troupe proceeded to carry out the assignment which had been given to it by Kim Jong Suk: some of them cleaned the repair shop, and helped the guerrillas in hammering and in working the bellows, and some went into the mountains following Kim Jong Suk to pick edible herbs and bush clover to make brooms with them. The guerrillas said that the children of the art troupe had saved the repair shop several days' work, and that they themselves would work harder because of their feelings of gratitude to the art troupe.

On visits to villages to give performances in the guerrilla zone, the art troupe cleaned the inside and outside of the houses in which they were lodging, fetched water, gathered firewood and weeded fields for those who were short of hands.

The art troupe also gave performances at units of the Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese force, making an active contribution to the implementation of General Kim Il Sung's policy of a joint front against the Japanese. This was a pressing task in those days. The Chinese units, which had been deceived by the reactionary propaganda of the Japanese imperialists and by their policy of driving a wedge between the Koreans and the Chinese, took a hostile attitude to the Koreans for no reason and placed great obstacles in the way of the military and political activities of the anti-Japanese guerrilla army.

At the meeting of the officials of the YCL in Wangqing, General Kim Il Sung instructed the young communists to invigorate their work with the Chinese anti-Japanese units. In June 1933, he met Wu Yicheng, the commander of a Chinese unit, at the risk of his life, held negotiations with him and opened up a new phase in the formation of a joint front against the Japanese.

In Yanji County, efforts were made to effect the united front with Xu Kuiwu's Pingri army, a Chinese anti-Japanese unit in the

vicinity of Sandaowan. No progress was made, however, because of Xu Kuiwu's hostile acts, which caused a heart-rending loss to the guerrilla army.

To this very unit Kim Jong Suk paid a visit, and met its commander Xu Kuiwu. She told him that she had come in support of General Kim Il Sung's joint-front policy, explained the Japanese imperialists' scheme of driving a wedge between the Koreans and the Chinese, and appealed to him fervently to fight against the common enemy, the Japanese imperialists.

At first, Xu cold-shouldered her, even revealing his hostility. But he was moved by her modest yet dignified attitude, earnest persuasion and revolutionary ardour. He said that he had been won over by the young girl operative of Commander Kim Il Sung, and treated her with hospitality. At last, an agreement was reached on allowing her art troupe to give a performance at his unit.

Xu Kui-wu exclaimed that Commander Kim had many able soldiers under his command.

A few days later, the art troupe gave a performance at Xu Kuiwu's unit. The Maypole, a song and dance act, and a harmonica solo were performed, and vocal solos and a small ensemble of revolutionary songs, and even Chinese songs were sung. The soldiers of the Chinese unit, who were seeing such a performance for the first time, hailed and applauded it and even joined in the dancing. Especially Kim Ki Song's harmonica solo and the duet dance by Kim Kum Sun and Kim Ok Sun moved the audience. Seeing this dance, many of the Chinese soldiers remembered in tears their younger sisters and daughters at home. Xu Kuiwu agreed to the request of the art troupe to try shooting his unit's rifles and even arranged a coach for the return journey of the art troupe.

The activities of the art troupe and Kim Jong Suk's convincing speeches further inspired the soldiers of the Pingri army with anti-

Japanese spirit, and contributed greatly to realizing the joint attack on Badaogou.

The surprise attack on the town of Badaogou took place on September 23, 1933. The guerrilla companies of Yanji and Xu Kuiwu's unit took part in the battle. Kim Jong Suk was in charge of the propaganda squad and the stretcher party, which were organized with YCL members.

The attack began at ten o'clock in the evening. Rifle shots aimed at the enemy barracks and the police station, and the explosion of grenades threw Badaogou into an uproar. The enemy, who had believed that the town of Badaogou, where his main force was concentrated, would never be attacked, was unable to put up effective resistance. The Korean guerrillas and the Chinese soldiers stormed the barracks and the police station, and then rushed into the streets.

At that moment, however, the Self-Defence Corps men on the battlements of the barracks opened fire in a volley. It was a critical juncture, as a delay would give the enemy a breathing space and a chance to counterattack.

Kim Jong Suk and her propaganda squad gathered below the battlements, and shouted:

"Brothers of the Self-Defence Corps, for whom have you taken up guns? Turn your fire on the Japanese! Men of the Self-Defence Corps, don't die like dogs by fighting against your own nation, against your compatriots!"

Confronted with these demoralizing shouts, the men on the battlements hesitated, and stopped firing. This turned the tide of the battle. The men on the battlements were neutralized, and the attacking force was victorious.

Kim Jong Suk and her propaganda squad scattered leaflets in the streets and shouted anti-Japanese slogans. A glimpse of the action of the propaganda squad was given by the press in those days:

"The assault on Badaogou, as already reported, started at ten o'clock in the evening, and lasted till 3:30 the next morning. ... The guerrillas attacked the Zhuangding Corps and the police. ... The children (the propaganda squad of the YCL-Tr.) made loud speeches, scattering four kinds of leaflets."

In the guerrilla zone, a joint meeting with Xu Kuiwu's unit was held to celebrate the victory in the battle of Badaogou. At the meeting, the art troupe gave a performance in celebration of the victory. The performance began with the chorus of Song of Decisive Battle, conducted by Kim Jong Suk.

By that time, Kim Jong Suk had become familiar with the soldiers of the Chinese anti-Japanese army. An anti-Japanese revolutionary veteran who saw the performance sitting by one of the Chinese soldiers said in recollection:

"The soldier of the Chinese anti-Japanese unit, who was sitting by my side, looking at Kim Jong Suk conducting the chorus, asked me if she was a cadre of the guerrilla army. I answered that she was a member of the District Committee of the YCL. With his thumb up, he said, 'Wait and see. That girl will become a heroine, a model everyone will follow."

In the spring of 1934, the CC art troupe of Yanji County was to go to Wangqing, where General Kim Il Sung, the sun of the nation, was. In order to show the General the performance at the highest level, Kim Jong Suk re-examined the performance programme and the contents of each item, made them perfect, and guided the training of the art troupe with great enthusiasm to improve the skill of the troupe. In spite of shortages of everything, she made new hand props.

On the day of the departure of the art troupe, Kim Jong Suk saw them off, saying, "You are going to Wangqing with all our intense yearning for General Kim Il Sung. On arrival at Wangqing, you must greet the General, earnestly wishing him good health on behalf of the members of the Young Communist League and the

Children's Corps and all the people here who are fighting as loyal soldiers of the General."

At Macun, Wangqing County, the art troupe gave a performance in the presence of General Kim Il Sung. The General was greatly satisfied with their performance, applauding at the end of each item, and saying that they were singing and dancing very well. When the art troupe was returning after their performance, he encouraged them to be good at learning and at art propaganda, and gave them a present of 40 red scarves. That was a very precious present, indicating his parental love for the CC and his great expectations of them, who would be heirs to the revolution.

STANDARD-BEARER IN THE GUERRILLA ZONE

Entering the winter of 1933, the enemy intensified his "punitive" operations against the guerrilla zones. Despite repeated failure, the Japanese imperialists enlisted the Jiandao task force of the occupation force in Korea, the puppet Manchukuo army[7], police force and armed Self-Defence Corps tens of thousands strong for winter "punitive" operations. They even brought in mortars and airplanes. Thousands of troops were hurled into the operations against the guerrilla zones in Yanji County.

Defence of the guerrilla zones was an important issue for expanding the anti-Japanese armed struggle and developing the overall Korean revolution without interruption.

Kim Jong Suk fought to defend the guerrilla zones with the unit of the AJPGA stationed in Donggou, Fuyan. Leading the members of the CV and CC, she dug trenches alongside the adults, and, when battles were fought, carried hot water to the

battlegrounds braving the hail of bullets, and sometimes joined the guerrillas in battles, rolling rocks down upon the enemy.

The revolutionary organization decided to evacuate the civilians in the guerrilla zone to Sifangtai, a safer place.

Late in December 1933, Kim Jong Suk left Cangcaicun with the first group of evacuees. When the second group was climbing the mountain west of the guerrilla zone, 100 Japanese "punitive" troops spotted them and began to pursue them up the snow-covered mountain slope. Most of the evacuees were old people and women carrying children on their backs. The distance between them and the enemy troops narrowed, enemy bullets hissed about their ears, and the whole group was at the very jaws of death.

At this moment, a bugle call rang out on Peak Lufei northwest of Cangcaicun. It was Kim Ki Song who was blowing the bugle. Having been assigned by the organization the task of watching the enemy's movements, he was climbing the peak when he saw the hair-raising situation. In order to divert the enemy's attention and save the people, he sounded the charge on his bugle.

The bugle call threw the enemy into terror and consternation, thinking that the guerrillas were upon them. Kim Ki Song blew his bugle, and drew the enemy after him and away from the evacuees. An enemy bullet hit him, and he fell, never to rise again. He was only 12 years old.

The evacuees too thought that the guerrillas had arrived and had annihilated the enemy soldiers. They crossed over the mountain and went to the intermediary rendezvous, where they joined the first group of evacuees. Kim Jong Suk, who had arrived there with the first group, built a campfire for the second group of evacuees so that they could spend the night there. She never thought that her brother was lying dead on a mountainside after saving the lives of the evacuees.

Kim Ki Song's corpse was found by a Women's Association worker returning from a mission in the enemy-held area. The woman had come to the guerrilla zone with Kim Jong Suk and shared a lodging with her. Climbing the peak she found a boy lying under an oak with a bugle in his hand. A red scarf was around his neck and two clubs were tied to the knapsack on his back. She recognized the boy as Kim Jong Suk's younger brother.

She cleared a place at the foot of the snow-covered peak, covered it with dry grass and leaves, and laid him there before covering him with snow.

When she got to the place where the evacuees were bivouacking, Kim Jong Suk, who was still not asleep, greeted her. Afraid that she might burst into tears if she looked Kim Jong Suk in the eye, she tried to avoid her gaze. Even in bed she bit her lips to repress her tears. Wide-awake the whole night, she could not tell Kim Jong Suk about her brother's death.

The revolutionary organization received the news of his death from her and fetched his corpse to the bivouac. Making preparations for a meeting in memory of Kim Ki Song, the organization informed Kim Jong Suk of his death.

Hearing the news of her brother with whom she had shared good times and bad, helping and leading each other, Kim Jong Suk felt as if the earth was collapsing.

At the bivouac, the meeting in memory of Kim Ki Song was held attended by guerrillas, local people and CC members.

A memorial address was made, in which Kim Ki Song's heroic exploit was mentioned and a determination to revenge on his death was expressed. Then, Kim Jong Suk took the floor. She said, "Ki Song was more than my brother; he was my revolutionary comrade. Our parents were killed by the Japanese imperialists. We took leave of our relatives and we don't know whether they are still alive or not. But he and I braved difficulties and mental sufferings together, picturing the day when we would return to our

hometown on the liberation of the country and meet our relatives again. I would not feel so grieved if Ki Song had been able to revisit the homeland which he so longed for."

Those attending the meeting wept aloud.

Kim Jong Suk continued, "I believe that though Ki Song died, the hundreds of people snatched from the jaws of death will do the work of Ki Song for the revolution and the country's liberation. The day will surely come when we will return to the liberated motherland."

A few days later, Kim Jong Suk left for Sifangtai, leading the revolutionary people her brother had rescued at the cost of his life.

Sifangtai, which commands a view of all sides, was a natural fortress advantageous for frustrating the enemy's attacks, but it had long been a deserted land-deep mountains and dark valleys. The hundreds of people who went there from several guerrilla zones in Yanji County found themselves homeless and short of food. Some began to despair.

Along with other YCL members, Kim Jong Suk made the rounds of the people scattered here and there, making fires for them, encouraging them and organizing art performances of the CC members.

She talked to the people, inspiring them to brace themselves to surmount all difficulties. She said, "The road of revolution is thorny. How arduous was the road that we have traversed so far! We have braved the forests of Japanese bayonets, allayed hunger, and crossed death lines with the sole thought of winning back our lost country. How can we abandon ourselves to despair here?

"If we pool our determination and strength, we can surely open a way to survival."

Despite the sorrow and pain in her heart, she channeled all her efforts into obtaining food for the evacuees in Sifangtai. With other people, she dug up dry herbs and grass roots, and picked

pine cones from under the snow. And with the YCL members, she went to the enemy-held areas several times to obtain food.

She went to Chiyandong, a semi-guerrilla zone[8] where there was an organization formed two years previously. It was a risky thing to go there, a place where the enemy prowled. But in order to obtain food for the people gathered in Sifangtai, she went there without hesitation, and returned with a large amount of food. This greatly helped the people to endure the cold of that winter.

Entering the year 1934, Kim Il Sung's order on frustrating the Japanese winter "punitive" operations was issued. In line with the order, battles were fought to harass the enemy in his rear. In these battles, Kim Jong Suk acted as a guide and scout for the guerrilla units.

When a small unit went to Jiudaogou, she obtained information about the enemy's transport of war supplies, so that the unit was able to ambush the convoy and capture the Self-Defence Corps men escorting it and ten cartloads of war supplies. She also reconnoitered Badaogou, a base of the enemy "punitive" troops, for a raid on the police substation there. She then found out the movements of the Self-Defence Corps in some villages in the area of Beituqiaofeng. This helped the guerrillas to attack them at the same time, capturing weapons and ammunition in large amounts.

In March that year, Kim Il Sung took the measure of reorganizing AJPGA into the KPRA. Thanks to this step, the guerrilla units that had been organized in various counties were brought under a unified military organizational system to develop into a revolutionary armed force that could carry out guerrilla activities on a larger scale.

Kim Jong Suk explained the significance of this move to the people, and took charge of some important programmes at the time of a function held in celebration of the event. With the function in the offing, she guided the CC exercise for a parade in

the daytime, guided the preparations for a performance by the CC art troupe in the evening, and at night prepared for a public lecture.

In April, a celebration was held in Nengzhiying in the Sandaowan guerrilla zone in Yanji County. The parade and performance given by CC members and Kim Jong Suk's public lecture, titled The Glorious Struggle to Win Back the Country, won enthusiastic applause from the people and the guerrillas.

In those days, Kim Jong Suk was engrossed in revolutionary work without a moment's respite. The county-level officials and people called her "a girl born for the revolution."

She was a true standard-bearer who devoted herself to the revolution and worked heart and soul for all the undertakings in the guerrilla zone.

HER WISH IS REALIZED

In the autumn of 1934, Kim Jong Suk was called to Nengzhiying, Sandaowan, to work at the Yanji County YCL Committee.

Everyone in District No.8 knew the district YCL committee member who was full of vivacity and animation, as kind-hearted to the CC members as their elder sister and to the people as their daughter, and relentless in front of the enemy. Her activities as a YCL member for two years, especially as a District No. 8 YCL Committee member, were characterized by a high sense of responsibility for her revolutionary assignments, devotion, excellent organizing abilities and traits befitting a revolutionary. This aroused trust in and respect for her among the people, and testified that she could fully undertake the work with young people on a higher level.

At the county YCL committee she engaged mainly in internal work and the work with the YCL organizations in the enemy-held areas.

In those days, the wind of ultra-Leftist anti-"Minsaengdan"[9] struggle, initiated by chauvinists and factionalists, was sweeping through the guerrilla zones in eastern Manchuria.

Availing themselves of the opportunity created by Kim Il Sung's expedition to northern Manchuria, the chauvinists and factionalists stigmatized true Korean revolutionaries as "Minsaengdan" members, persecuting and even murdering them.

In Nengzhiying, Sandaowan, Ri Sang Muk was raising the whirlwind of the anti-"Minsaengdan" struggle. He stigmatized one man as a "Minsaengdan" member for saying on his way home from night sentry duty that he was hungry, a cook for burning rice and another man for expressing sympathy for a comrade who was suspected of being a member.

The people did not know whom to trust or when misfortune would befall them; they lived in terror and suspense. Among the "Minsaengdan" suspects imprisoned were Ku Myong Bok, the county Party chief, whom Kim Jong Suk had been acquainted with from their days in District No. 8, and Kim Tong Gu, a man of strong principles and a courageous officer of the guerrilla army.

Kim Jong Suk did not believe that they were "Minsaengdan" members, and felt from the beginning that the struggle against the organization was cooked up by evil people. Besides, she had experience of fighting against this misguided struggle. In the previous spring, a meeting to try a "Minsaengdan" member was held in Fuyan. The one to be tried was Choe Hui Suk, who had long worked well as a YCL member. The evidence against her was that she had "complained" about the difficult life in the guerrilla zone. Everyone present at the meeting knew that she could not be a "Minsaengdan" member, but did not dare say so lest they themselves be tarred with the same brush. Kim Jong Suk,

however, unhesitatingly took the floor, and spoke in defence of Choe. She said, "I believe that Choe is faithful to the revolution. How can we say our revolutionary comrade is a 'Minsaengdan' member just because of a word she uttered? If we kill revolutionaries as 'Minseangdan' members, it will be the enemy who will benefit."

The audience responded to her appeal. The chauvinists who were trying her could not but find her innocent. Later, Choe fought bravely as a soldier of the KPRA. She was arrested by the enemy, who blinded her. But she shouted, "I can see the victory of the revolution," demonstrating the indefatigable will and revolutionary principles of Korean revolutionaries.

One year later, the situation was even grimmer. No logic defence or strong evidence made sense. Anyone who defended the "Minsaengdan" suspects or helped them, even to the slightest degree, was condemned as a "Minsaengdan" member there and then.

However, Kim Jong Suk could not remain silent when true revolutionaries were stigmatized as "Minsaengdan" members and killed, and an atmosphere of distrust and terror was created in the revolutionary ranks.

When the Anti-Japanese Self-Defence Corps members in Donggou were condemned as being connected with the "Minsaengdan", Kim Jong Suk visited them without hesitation. She encouraged them, saying that they should never give in, but instead hold fast to their revolutionary principles as befitted young Korean revolutionaries.

This could not but enrage the chauvinists and factionalist worshippers of big powers. One of them warned her not to meet the suspects again, saying that her visits were an expression of narrow-minded nationalism.

Kim Jong Suk retorted, saying, "I'm a YCL worker. How can I give a wide berth to them? You say I am a 'narrow-minded

nationalist' because I keep a relationship with them as a Korean. It is you who are really prejudiced and narrow-minded. If you can't trust the people who are fighting bravely with the sole desire for revolution, then who can you trust?"

The chauvinists and factionalists kept watch on her with a sharper eye from then on, in order to find some fault with her. But they could not go to the length of condemning her as a "Minsaengdan" member as she was prudent in her every movement and enjoyed the people's affection and trust.

Kim Jong Suk brought the peril of the ultra-Leftist anti-"Minsaengdan" struggle home to the YCL members, telling them to beware of the schemes of the evil people. Among those YCL members were Jon Hui, a county YCL worker, and Ri Jong In, who was working at the liaison bureau of the county Party committee.

Together with Ri Jong In, Kim Jong Suk sent food and medicine to the comrades in "prison." It was thanks to this that the "prisoners" were rescued from death from hunger and disease. They did not know who were doing the risky job, for their benefactors might be punished as "Minsaengdan" members if they were discovered. The "prisoners" came to know who the persons they had to be grateful to were when the enemy "punitive" troops pounced upon Sandaowan.

That day Kim Jong Suk was cooking lunch for the guerrillas with Ri Jong In. The lunch was millet gruel boiled with mushrooms. While the cauldrons were boiling, the sound of enemy rifle shots rang out. The guerrillas climbed a nearby mountain.

Seeing the situation, Kim Jong Suk made a head-pad with grass and with the boiling cauldron on the pad hurried up the mountain. Ri Jong In followed suit, with a smaller cauldron on her head.

Seeing the two girls, the enemy began to give chase. Bullets whistled round their ears and the cauldrons felt hot. Ri Jong In

shouted to Kim Jong Suk to hide somewhere with the cauldrons off the heads to take them later. With the steaming cauldron still on her head, Kim Jong Suk said, "Endure it a little longer, Jong In. Then we can relieve our comrades of hunger."

When they reached the mountain top, several people helped them put down the cauldrons. They were the "Minsaengdan" suspects who had been in "jail." As Ri Sang Muk had run away with the key to the "jail," they had broken the door open and climbed the mountain. They fought bravely shoulder to shoulder with the other guerrillas, rolling rocks down. At last, they repulsed the enemy's attack.

After the battle, Kim Jong Suk served a bowlful of the still-hot gruel to each guerrilla. But the "prisoners" tried to leave the place.

Kim Jong Suk said to them, "Please come and help yourselves to the hot gruel. We have brought gruel for you; why are you keeping away from us?"

They stood still, and looked around to see if anyone was watching them. One of them said, "If you are labeled as 'Minsaengdan' members because of this gruel, it will be a great blow to the revolution. No, that cannot be. We regard your minds as nourishment for the revolution. We can endure any difficulties."

Kim Jong Suk said, "You cannot be 'Minsaengdan' members. General Kim Il Sung will iron out this grave situation. So, you must not lose faith. Please think how to wage revolution to the last."

Only then did they realize that she was the one who had rendered them encouragement every day at the risk of her life. Taking the bowls of gruel from her, they were surprised. Her hair had been half burnt away by the boiling cauldron.

Her self-sacrificing effort, however, could not save all the comrades suspected of being "Minsaengdan" members. In January 1935, when the chauvinistic inspector from the Manchurian

Provincial YCL Committee came to Nengzhiying, guerrilla officer Kim Tong Gu and some others were executed. They shouted, "Long live the Korean revolution!" before breathing their last.

Kim Jong Suk writhed in agony at her inability to save the revolutionaries from being framed and executed, or to check the extremist counterrevolutionary crimes committed by the cursed chauvinists and factionalist sycophants.

Kim Jong Suk anxiously awaited the day when Kim Il Sung would save the Korean revolution from crisis.

In his memoirs, Rim Chun Chu, who was a surgeon in the guerrilla hospital in those days, wrote, "Kim Jong Suk said earnestly: 'It is only the outstanding leader of the Korean revolution Comrade Kim Il Sung who can break the deadlock of the revolution and put to rights this extremist anti-'Minsaengdan' struggle. Where can he be now? I wonder if he knows about this state of affairs.'

"I wept in my heart, like her.

"Great Comrade Kim Il Sung, whom we had missed all the time, was the only saviour and symbol of trust, hope and victory for the Korean revolutionaries who were living in the whirlwind of the anti-'Minsaengdan' struggle."

On his return from an expedition to northern Manchuria, Kim Il Sung attended a meeting held in Dahuangwai in February 1935, and laid bare the counterrevolutionary nature of the struggle against the "Minsaengdan", and made efforts to deal with its aftermath.

One day in March that year, several days after this news reached Nengzhiying, Sandaowan, Kim Il Sung visited the place, and Kim Jong Suk had her first chance to see him, a wish she had cherished for a long time. The moment she saw him she felt tears rolling down her cheeks.

Kim Jong Suk attended the meeting of officials of the secretariat of the county Party committee convened by him. His smile, as warm as the sun on a spring day, his sharp eyes cast at

the chauvinists and factionalist sycophants, his sonorous voice--all gripped her heart.

Based on a detailed study of the Leftist error revealed in the anti-"Minsaengdan" struggle in the Sandaowan guerrilla zone, Kim Il Sung laid bare the great harm chauvinists and factionalist sycophants incurred for the revolution, and further indicated the principles to be adhered to in the future struggle and the methods for it. His speech dissipated the pent-up grievances of the people, and instilled faith and courage in them.

Kim Jong Suk felt happy that her wish to see him and hear his opinions on the issue had been fulfilled.

When the meeting was over, she told the people what he had said at the meeting.

From the day that Kim Il Sung visited Sandaowan, the guerrilla zones in Yanji County seethed with the joy of resurgence. The people who had been detained as "Minsaengdan" suspects were released, and had emotional reunions with their families and friends.

On the evening of the day Kim Il Sung left the guerrilla zone, Kim Jong Suk said to her friends, "He's wonderful! Wherever I am, I'll trust and follow him. I'll live and fight all my life as his revolutionary."

AT CHECHANGZI

In March 1935, Kim Jong Suk went to Chechangzi, Antu County.

In 1934, a new guerrilla zone had been built in Chechangzi, adjacent to the primeval forests of Mt. Paektu, to cope with the Japanese imperialist "siege" operations.

Kim Jong Suk left Sandaowan with the last group of old people and children. She traveled 80 km, and arrived at Chechangzi on March 20. By that time, buildings for the people's revolutionary government bodies, guerrilla barracks, a CC school, a hospital, a weapons repair shop and a sewing workshop had been built.

On arrival, she put up at the headquarters of the regiment of the KPRA stationed there. She was assigned the task of giving guidance to the YCL organization in the guerrilla gone while working at the cooking unit.

In those days, the new guerrilla zone was faced with a dire situation: More than one thousand people had flocked there from various places and the people were experiencing a shortage of food due to the enemy's ceaseless "punitive" and "siege" operations. To make matters worse, the saboteurs and turncoats still hiding in the revolutionary ranks schemed to starve the people there.

The guerrilla unit, leaving for an expedition, had left behind a considerable sum of money for the benefit of the people, but the chauvinist in the leadership position was spending the money for his own purposes. He took the measure of cutting all links with the people, including the revolutionary organization members, in the enemy-ruled areas, claiming that they were connected to the "Minsaengdan". This blocked the channels for obtaining grain. The schemes of the enemies both within the guerrilla zone and without reduced it to a famine-stricken area.

The grain the guerrillas had obtained at the cost of their blood was so small in amount compared to the number of people in the new guerrilla zone that it was distributed to every household one spoonful at a time. It was early spring, but there was still snow on the ground. People dug up grass roots and picked acorns from

under the snow, stripped the trees of bark and nipped the dry shoots off the wild grapevines for food. Eating boiled wild grapevine shoots, without even a pinch of salt, made the throat bleed. But even such poor food was not abundant. Resolving the food problem was an issue on which the destiny of the guerrilla zone depended.

Kim Jong Suk set about tackling the difficulties facing the guerrilla zone. From the day after her arrival at the zone, she aroused the YCL officials and CC instructors to consolidate their organizations and rally the scattered YCL and CC members, and led them to stand in the van in the effort to overcome the hardships.

She directed a great effort to laying out the CC lodgings in a proper way, and helping the dispersed CC members to study and enjoy an organizational life.

She said to the head of the children's bureau: "It is true that the situation of the guerrilla zone is very difficult. But we can't wait for others to solve for us the problems arising in CC work. We must solve them by our own efforts, and thus implement General Kim Il Sung's instructions on training the CC members as successors to the revolution."

Bringing the issue of the CC lodgings to the county government officials, she said the bereaved children of revolutionaries were spending nights on straw, shivering with cold and weeping at the thought of their deceased parents, and suggested that they should take good care of the children for their parents' sake.

Thanks to her efforts, the children's voices reading and singing began to ring out in famine-stricken Chechangzi, and this gave people hope for and confidence in tomorrow and the victory of the revolution.

Winter turned into spring. The snow and ice in the valleys melted, and grass began to sprout, but the people could not be

delivered from famine. It was the season to sow seeds, but the people were too emaciated to do the work. The YCL members who were calling people to the fields also collapsed with hunger.

Kim Jong Suk said to these YCL members, in earnest: "If we, the young vanguard, do not rise up, what will be the destiny of the people in Chechangzi who have collapsed from starvation? We must rise up, rise up, arouse the revolutionary masses and advance our revolution. If we, the YCL members, give in, the people in the guerrilla zone will die of hunger."

In response to her appeal the YCL members formed a YCL sowing team and started a sowing campaign.

In the meantime, Kim Jong Suk called at one house after another, and appealed to the people, saying, "We must sow seeds in the fields, even if we have to eat grass. Only then can we defend the guerrilla base from the enemy's attacks. Let us brace ourselves!"

The people rose up, and sowed seeds with the YCL members. Next morning, they found the seeds dug out. It was the work of saboteurs in the guerrilla zone. Having sown the seeds almost crawling on all fours, the people were dumbfounded.

Kim Jong Suk said to these people: "Today's sowing is a serious struggle with the enemy. It is not an undertaking to remain alive; it is a struggle over whether to drive out the Japanese aggressors and restore the country or to remain downtrodden under their feet as their slaves. Let's picture the day when we will return to the liberated country with General Kim Il Sung. On that day, we'll recall today's difficulty as an ancient memory."

Too feeble to stand up, the people sowed seeds crawling. Some fell in the fields never to rise again.

The seeds of barley, potato and millet sprouted, and the fields in Chechangzi turned green, but the sprouts were yet to ripen. The famine reached an extreme level, and people ate frogs and even frog spawn. The number of those dying of hunger increased.

However, the chauvinists in the leadership position of the guerrilla zone, instead of solving the food problem, built higher the barrier against the enemy-held areas, and were hell-bent on finding fictitious "Minsaengdan" members. They stigmatized Ri Song Hak, head of the food department of the guerrilla zone, as a "Minsaengdan" suspect on the grounds that he had asked permission to go to the enemy-held areas to obtain food, and harassed him.

Kim Jong Suk met Ri, and encouraged him, saying that he should not be dispirited and give in to intimidation, but work for the revolution, trusting only Kim Il Sung.

Inspired by her words, Ri rationed out grain to the people to the last portion, and worked faithfully, himself living on grass roots before dying of hunger.

Unable to stigmatize him as a "Minsaengdan" member any longer, the chauvinists claimed this time that Ri had been killed by the "Minsaengdan", crying that its members must be tracked down. When their true colours were about to be disclosed, they branded two men in the Chechangzi people's revolutionary government as "Minsaengdan" members, and executed them because the two men had known the crimes they had committed.

The Japanese siege of the guerrilla zone and "punitive" offensives against it grew more and more vicious. The manoeuvrings of the enemy both in the guerrilla zone and outside aggravated its food situation beyond imagination. Rodents and snakes were annihilated for food, and even grass could not be seen there.

An anti-Japanese revolutionary veteran, Paek Hak Rim, who experienced the hardship in Chechangzi, said later:

"If you don't know the extreme misery the people in Chechangzi suffered in the days of the anti-Japanese war, don't dare to utter a word about a hard life. If you don't know how the guerrillas and people of Chechangzi endured hunger and cold and

survived the enemy's 'punitive' atrocities even during the siege, don't dare to pride yourself on overcoming some difficulty."

In those days, the people of Chechangzi had another choice. Over one or two hills there was an area where clothes and food were available, an enemy-held area. Enemy propaganda claimed that those who escaped the guerrilla zone would be provided with conditions for a comfortable life.

However, they refused to go to the enemy-held area, even though they were persecuted on false charges by the chauvinists or suffered from hunger. They were ready to die there. They had lived for less than three years in the guerrilla zone had created for them, a world free from Japanese imperialists, landlords and capitalists, but the new world and the red flag fluttering in the sky of the guerrilla zone were precious to them, and they were confident that the day would come when they would return to the liberated homeland with Kim Il Sung flying the red flag.

When the barley began to grow, Kim Jong Suk called on people's houses with green leaves, and said, "Look! The barley has grown this much." When it was in the ear, she showed the areas to the people encouraging them to endure a little longer. The people, especially the YCL and CC members, gained strength from her optimism.

One night, the CC entertainment group was giving a performance in the courtyard of the guerrilla quarters. The youngest girl, who was singing with others Song of General Mobilization collapsed. Hunger had exhausted the last ounce of her strength. The CC members stopped singing. Bewildered, the audience all stood up.

Kim Jong Suk rushed to the stage, and took the girl in her arms. Instead of weeping or groaning, the girl continued to sing, opening her lips that had turned pale.

Let's go, let's go, let's go to fight.

Let's hasten, and go with courage.

... ...

The guerrillas and other people, in tears, sang the song in chorus. The song ringing in the night sky instilled in the hearts of the guerrillas and other people a grim resolve.

When Kim Jong Suk could not see things clearly because of hunger and fatigue, her colleagues asked her to take rest in bed. She said to them, "Then, who will cook meals, collect firewood, stand sentry duty and fight battles?"

One day, a meeting of officials of the party, YCL and the people's revolutionary government, and the commanding personnel of the People's Revolutionary Army was held at the headquarters of the regiment of the revolutionary army in Chechangzi to discuss how to solve the food problem. Many suggested that they should make contact with the revolutionary organizations in the enemy-held areas to obtain food, but the chauvinists again attempted to shelve the suggestion, saying that they should not deal with the members of the secret organizations in the enemy-held areas, for most of them were "Minsaengdan" suspects.

Kim Jong Suk could no longer remain silent. She stood up and attacked the sophistry of a chauvinist in a leadership position, saying,

"In the present situation, there is no way of obtaining food other than going to the enemy-held areas. But you say that we cannot cooperate with them because most of them are suspected of being 'Minsaengdan' members. This is a wrong view that reveals that you do not trust our revolutionary comrades. To be frank, it is tantamount to giving up the revolution. We should trust the revolutionaries who are fighting in the enemy-held areas, and be bold in joining hands with them. In this way we can solve the food problem."

Her logical words met with a warm response from the others, and the chauvinist could not stick to his opinion.

Thanks to Kim Jong Suk's efforts, small units of the guerrillas went to the enemy-held areas and obtained certain amounts of food in cooperation with the revolutionary organizations there.

In the meantime, the traitors in the revolutionary ranks resorted to other vicious machinations.

Around this time, Kim Il Sung dispatched to Chechangzi Jo Tong Uk and some other men as commissioners. The commissioners began to straighten out the situation in the guerrilla zone.

As they knew that their crimes were about to be disclosed by Jo Tong Uk, the traitors plotted to assassinate him.

Kim Jong Suk, who had been watching their movements closely, helped Jo escape just in time.

After the liberation of the country, Kim Il Sung recollected with deep emotion that but for Kim Jong Suk, Jo would not have survived, and only a person prepared to lay down his or her life could save a revolutionary comrade from danger as she had done.

Kim Jong Suk was bold in her work in the enemy-held areas.

One day, she heard that the revolutionary organizations and people in the homeland were awaiting the KPRA's thrust into the homeland and were eager to form a relationship with the guerrilla zones.

Thinking that work in the enemy-held areas could not be delayed any longer, she presented this opinion to her organization.

The organization sent a political work team consisting of Kim Jong Suk and four armed men in civilian clothes to the homeland.

Wherever they went, she told the people the battle results of the KPRA, instilling confidence in victory in their hearts, and ensured that those who had lost contact with their organizations resumed the contact. At the same time, she obtained a great amount of supplies for the guerrillas.

A newspaper of those days reported the activities of the team in this way,

"As reported previously, members of X organization intruded into Puryong County, North Hamgyong Province, at dawn on the fourth of this month. Their whereabouts are still unknown. Based in Sokmak railway station, Puryong, an investigation team is on their trail. According to a detailed on-the-spot investigation, they were quite audacious. ... Without endangering the lives of the local people, they took away gold rings, clothes, cloth and other goods equivalent to about 100 won, and made public the day (the 7th or 8th) when they would come back before coolly going on their way."

This article shows part of Kim Jong Suk's operations to lure the enemy's attention to Sokmak, so as to ensure safe and wide-scale activities for the work team.

Before withdrawing from Jungphyong Village with the goods the people had prepared for them, Kim Jong Suk asked the people to inform the police station immediately that the political workers had said they would come back on the 7th or 8th. While the enemy was concentrating on the village, the team conducted political work in other areas, and returned to the guerrilla zone safely.

In summer that year, the guerrilla company that had been summoned to Wangqing by Kim Il Sung returned to Chechangzi. O Jung Hup was a member of this company.

O Jung Hup taught her Song of the Anti-Japanese War, a song Kim Il Sung himself had written during the first expedition to northern Manchuria. The enemy had trailed the expedition force on its return. Surrounded by the enemy, the guerrillas had been preparing for a life-and-death battle. At that time, Kim Il Sung had suffered from atrophy, but composed the song and sung it in front of his men.

Kim Jong Suk taught the song to the YCL members. In a few days, all the people in the guerrilla zone had learned it. Singing the song that inspires one to a do-or-die battle, the people of Chechangzi surmounted the last crisis. The early grains ripened in the fields. Smiles showed on all the people's faces.

The recollection of Kim Myong Hwa, who lived in Chechangzi with Kim Jong Suk in those days, still moves the people.

One morning after the guerrillas went to a battle after taking gruel for breakfast, Kim Jong Suk thought deeply. She felt sorry to think that she had to cook gruel for supper again. She searched her knapsack and found a small amount of wheat powder. She decided to make a special dish with it. Together with Kim Myong Hwa she stripped some bark from pine trees. They ground the pine bark, mixed it with wheat powder and made cakes with the mixture. The cakes were a special treat for the people who had been eating nothing but gruel.

When the guerrillas returned in the evening, they were delighted to see the special food. Leaning on the kitchen door, Kim Jong Suk and Kim Myong Hwa saw the guerrillas taking their supper with relish. They forgot how hard they had worked all day to make the cakes. When the guerrillas had almost finished supper, Kim Jong Suk brought her share and gave it to them. The officers told her to take it, but she said it was an extra portion. She gave even the last one to them. Kim Myong Hwa, too, gave her share to the guerrillas. That night the two girls went to bed without having a taste of the special food.

The girls failed to fall asleep for a long time, looking at the moon through the window. Kim Myong Hwa asked,

"Jong Suk, aren't you hungry?"

"Seeing the comrades so happy, I forgot my hunger. It's not only food that fills the stomach, I think. To make the

comrades feel so happy, I would forgo meals altogether," answered Kim Jong Suk calmly.

After liberation, Kim Myong Hwa, reminded of what had happened that evening, bought a bowlful of cakes of that type at the market in Karugae in Pyongyang and called Kim Jong Suk. With a feeling of joy, Kim Jong Suk boiled soup with bean curd. But that day she could not take even one cake, for fresh in her memory were the life in Chechangzi, full of difficulties and hardships, as well as the people there who had died from hunger and her comrades-in-arms who had fallen in action without seeing the victory of the revolution.

3. WOMAN GENERAL OF PAEKTU

JOINING THE KPRA

On September 18, 1935, Kim Jong Suk joined the KPRA in the Chechangzi guerrilla zone.

That day, a new chapter opened in Kim Jong Suk's career as a legendary "anti-Japanese revolutionary heroine" and "woman general of Mt. Paektu".

In front of the red flag fluttering in the sky of Chechangzi, she was awarded a rifle bearing the blood and wishes of fallen comrades and the expectations of the Korean nation.

That day, Kim Jong Suk expressed her determination in this way:

"With this rifle bearing the blood of the revolutionary forerunners and the people's desire for national liberation, I will be faithful to General Kim Il Sung to the last moment of my life. I

take this one rifle as one hundred rifles and will shoot one bullet as one hundred bullets to take revenge on the enemy."

She was faithful to this resolve from her first day in the KPRA. On joining the army, she was entrusted by the Party organization with the task of doing the YCL work in the unit. While performing this task, she was zealous in exercising guerrilla tactics and political study. She also devoted efforts to shooting practice. Her marksmanship became known from the battles she fought in to defend the guerrilla zone.

In October that year, a revolutionary organization in the enemy-held area sent a message to the guerrilla zone. Enemy troops numbering 10,000 were to be hurled into the "punitive" operations against the guerrilla zone.

The guerrillas, Anti-Japanese Self-defence Corps and Young Volunteers' Corps in the guerrilla zone totalled only about 100. The odds were overwhelmingly against the guerrillas. Anxiety and apprehension prevailed among the commanding officers, and it was transmitted to the men in the fighting positions.

Kim Jong Suk, occupying a position with other fighters, encouraged them, saying that their defence position on a steep cliff near the Godong River was quite advantageous for repulsing the enemy's attack.

The battle started in the early morning. The enemy soldiers, armed with heavy and light machine-guns and artillery, and supported by planes, launched their attack on three sides. On the bank of the river they stopped advancing, and started bombing to detect the positions of the guerrillas. They had to cross a log bridge over the river, and there, a gateway to the guerrilla zone, crack shots of the KPRA were positioned. As there was no response from the guerrillas, the enemy soldiers began to cross the river over the narrow bridge at about noon.

The guerrillas discharged a volley of bullets when the main column of the enemy troops was in the middle of the bridge. The

bridge was covered with the corpses of the enemy soldiers in an instant.

Kim Jong Suk hit with a single shot a Japanese officer who was commanding his men with a sword.

Seeing their officer fall, the enemy soldiers retreated in haste into the forest.

The company commander ran to the guerrillas, and said that the enemy were attempting to break through the defence line of the Young Volunteers' Corps, and reinforcements should be sent there.

Kim Jong Suk volunteered to go, as she had been there several times. She rushed there together with a veteran guerrilla. The enemy soldiers were crossing the river, and a group of them were already climbing the height occupied by the young volunteers. The inexperienced young volunteers were in a panic.

Reading the situation at once, Kim Jong Suk rushed to the volunteers and shouted, "Comrades, roll down the rocks!" There were heaps of rocks there, which had been piled up at the time of the building of the defence position. The volunteers came to their senses, and began to roll the rocks down. Faced with this unexpected type of attack, the enemy soldiers were thrown into confusion. At this moment, Kim Jong Suk told the volunteers to fire their rifles, taking careful aim, herself shooting down an enemy soldier with every bullet each.

The battle was fiercer the next day. At the height of the battle, ammunition was in short supply. Kim Jong Suk, along with other women, volunteered to carry ammunition. She carried two ammunition chests at a time, when the other women found it quite enough to carry one. Once, a bomb exploded near them. After the smoke cleared, they found that Kim Jong Suk, who had been walking in front, was nowhere to be seen. They felt quite worried. They called to her. All of a sudden, they heard Kim Jong Suk

shouting from the top of the height, "What are you doing down there?"

The battles to defend the guerrilla zone ended in victory for the guerrillas.

It was in November 1935 that she left Chechangzi.

The unit of the KPRA stationed in Chechangzi had to move in the direction of Naitoushan, Antu County and Mihunzhen.

Embarking on the road to Naitoushan, Kim Jong Suk looked back at Chechangzi several times. Even after the liberation of the country, she was to frequently recollect with other women veterans the days in Chechangzi.

The unit arrived near Erdaogou, Antu County, after 10 days of marching through snow. A stooge of the Japanese imperialists, who had been running a large insam (ginseng) plantation there, fled at the sight of the guerrillas. The unit obtained a large amount of supplies there. The workers, moved by Kim Jong Suk's political work, volunteered to carry the supplies for the guerrillas.

Leaving the plantation, the unit marched for some days, when they encountered enemy "punitive" troops. Taking the initiative, the guerrillas drove the enemy onto the defensive. But the enemy regrouped a few minutes later, and offered resistance. Holding the enemy's counterattack in check, some of the guerrillas moved to a favourable position. Running with them across fallen trees, Kim Jong Suk continued to fire her rifle. Her composed behaviour and sure shots helped the guerrillas hold their ground. But one recruit, unaware that his rifle had slipped off his shoulder, was running helter-skelter. Seeing him running without his rifle, Kim Jong Suk turned back to find it. Others shouted that it was dangerous, but she ran braving the shower of enemy bullets, and returned with his rifle. Only then did the recruit realize that he had lost it.

He went to her, and said, in tears, "Thank you. Thank you very much."

He then asked her not to report the incident to his superior.

She reasoned with him, saying he should not hide his mistake but unbosom himself and accept others' criticism so as not to make such a mistake again.

Moved by her words, he criticized himself boldly, and announced his determination in front of his comrades that he would become a true guerrilla. From that day on, he would sleep hugging his rifle.

As Kim Jong Suk's advice, proceeding from her self-sacrificing affection for her comrades, was true to principle, not only the recruit but also others were moved.

Towards the end of November, the unit arrived at Naitoushan, Antu County.

Naitoushan is a mountain rising from the forest northeast of Mt. Paektu. At the foot of the mountain was a village of 70 households.

In the village, the unit conducted brisk political work.

Kim Jong Suk performed the work of educating women, to rally them behind an organization. As a result, a hard core was trained and a women's association was formed on February 3 the following year.

At the meeting to form the organization, Kim Jong Suk made a speech on uniting women firmly around the association. Explaining why women should be affiliated to the organization, she said that the immediate task of the association was to rally more women behind it, strengthen the organizational life of its members, support the guerrillas faithfully, keep revolutionary vigilance and help its members transform their families along revolutionary lines.

Several mass organizations that had been destroyed or had not played their roles properly were either reformed or started to operate full of vigour.

A Japanese document of those days described the activities of the KPRA unit in Naitoushan as follows:

"After moving to Naitoushan, the communist army gathered the villagers in November Showa[10] (1935), and abolished the Manchukuo[11] system of village head, organizing in its place a peasant committee.

"At a consultative meeting, the villagers elected the chairman, vice-chairman and head of the accounting section of the committee.

"Subsequently, the committee supported revolutionary organizations by providing them with food and fuel and carrying materials for them.

"In February the following year, a women's association was formed."

The unit also conducted military activities.

Typical of these was a battle fought against the Wu's unit of the puppet Manchukuo army stationed in Liushucun. The soldiers of the unit had killed even the last hen in the village. They had charged into a house where a wedding ceremony was being held, taken away the bride and the quilt she had prepared and assaulted her. When the bridegroom protested, they had killed him. The wrath of the people there was running high.

On January 13, 1936, the companies from the 1st Regiment that had come for a joint operation joined the guerrilla unit four km from Liushucun.

The enemy barracks on the southern edge of the village was surrounded by a high mud wall. There were two-storey battlements on the wall.

Kim Jong Suk was attached to the third team assigned to charge through the gate, and raid the enemy barracks. When the team approached the gate, another raiding team was discovered by the enemy. The situation was very unfavourable. The team could neither break through the gate because of the shower of enemy bullets nor climb over the high wall. Leaning on the wall, Kim Jong Suk felt under her feet earth

which had crumbled from the wall. She thought that the weak part of the wall could be pushed down. The team leader ordered his men to push the wall, as she had proposed. A part of the wall fell and the guerrillas rushed through. An Thae Bom set up his machinegun on the wall and shot at the enemy who were trying to escape. The enemy soldiers were annihilated.

Alarmed at the military and political activities of the KPRA unit at Naitoushan, the Japanese imperialists started "punitive" operations there. The enemy forces consisted of 800 Japanese and puppet Manchukuo soldiers and policemen including the "new army" and a mortar battery. The "new army," commanded by Ri To Son, commander of the "Dongbiandao Punitive Command," was a brutal unit. It was annihilated later near Jinchang by the unit of the KPRA, led by Choe Hyon[12].

At that time, only the people attached to the sewing unit, weapons repair shop, hospital and other service organs, CC members and 40 guerrillas were at Naitoushan. But the guerrillas and villagers came out for the battle without fear.

Kim Jong Suk fought in the battle, and at the same time, together with women guerrillas and village women, carried ammunition chests, hot water and food to the combatants from the village.

One night, while the battle was still raging, she was climbing a mountain with a woman guerrilla carrying a jar of hot water for the combatants when she slipped on some ice and tumbled down a slope. The woman guerrilla hurried down, and found that though she had lost consciousness, she was holding the water jar tightly. Her affection for her revolutionary comrades and fighting spirit encouraged the guerrillas to endure cold and fatigue in the battle.

Though they suffered heavy casualties and spent nights without fires because of the night raids of the guerrillas, the enemy

soldiers did not stop their attack; they knew that the number of guerrillas was not so large.

Kim Jong Suk fought at the salient of the height that bore the brunt of the battle. Four hundred metres down from the height, an enemy officer was leading a charge. She killed the officer with a single shot.

An old man from the village, who was watching her marksmanship, said he had fired about two sackfuls of ammunition in his days with the Independence Army but had never seen such a crack shot as she was. He repeatedly said, "You're a heroine!"

The enemy retreated only after suffering 300 casualties.

In February that year, the guerrillas left Naitoushan for Maanshan, Fusong County. The villagers went a long way with the guerrillas braving a snowstorm to see them off.

Later, the people of Naitoushan moved to various places, including Korea, to keep away from the enemy's "punitive" operations. In the places they settled in, they spread the report that there was a woman crack shot in the People's Revolutionary Army.

IN MAANSHAN

From Naitoushan to Maanshan was not a long distance, and it took only two days on foot in ordinary times. But at this time of year the primeval forest, waist-deep snow, rugged cliffs and steep mountain ridges made the march very difficult.

In addition, Kim Jong Suk was leading 20 CC members. The children had followed the guerrilla unit from Chechangzi.

When they were about to leave Chechangzi, some narrow-minded commanding officers and chauvinists suggested sending

the children to the enemy's ruling area, claiming that they would hinder the guerrilla action.

Kim Jong Suk said that this ran against the intention of General Kim Il Sung, and it was a dangerous suggestion which did not consider the future of the Korean revolution. Many of the guerrillas supported Kim Jong Suk. The children who had followed the guerrilla unit from Chechangzi suffered much, separated from the unit temporarily when the guerrillas encountered the enemy, but they finally arrived in Naitoushan. Their determination was that even if they were to die, they would die while following the guerrilla unit.

In Naitoushan, Kim Jong Suk patched children's clothes and took good care of sick children. The children gained some experience there, watching the enemy's moves, standing guard and taking part in battles against the enemy's "punitive" troops by helping the guerrillas.

Nevertheless, leaving Naitoushan, some chauvinists and their followers again tried to leave the children behind. We need not make these poorly-dressed children suffer hardships by dragging them about in this rigorous winter. How miserable they are trying to keep up with the unit! Remember how much they hindered our actions on the way to Naitoushan. This was their assertion.

Kim Jong Suk refuted this assertion. She said that the fallen comrades would blame them, if they left the children behind in Naitoushan. She repeatedly insisted that she would personally lead the children on her own responsibility.

The chauvinists had to capitulate. When they got near to Maanshan, the regimental headquarters, heading for Jiaohe, gave an instruction that only the "Minsaengdan" suspects and the CC members should proceed to the Maanshan secret camp.

Repressing her anger, Kim Jong Suk walked towards Maanshan with the totally exhausted children. When some children fell down, she encouraged them, saying that if they

walked a little more, they would see Maanshan. Sometimes she walked with a little boy on her back.

When they arrived in Maanshan, nobody welcomed them. Instead, the chief of the secret camp became angry and asked who ordered her to bring children to the secret camp. Saying that the children would hinder the guerrilla action, he demanded that she take them to a far-off log cabin.

The guerrillas who had come together with the children were sent to the Sampho secret camp, separated from the main camp, because they were "Minsaengdan" suspects.

The log cabin in which the children were put had no door or paper coverings for the windows. Snowflakes flew into the room through the door and windows. In the cabin there were already other children, whose condition was even more wretched than that of those Kim Jong Suk had brought with her. They had also come to Maanshan following a guerrilla unit, determined to avenge their dead parents, but they were neglected. Consequently, Kim Jong Suk alone had charge of dozens of children.

Two days passed, but nobody called at the log cabin. Kim Jong Suk repaired the log cabin with the children to make it basically comfortable, but there was no way to obtain food. On the third day, she visited the chief of the secret camp, but he said that the Maanshan secret camp was not a place for bringing up children, and demanded that she send them to the enemy-ruled area.

In the meantime the food he allowed for the children was not enough to provide them with even one meal a day.

Kim Jong Suk herself dug out grass roots from the snow-covered ground and picked berries to feed the children. Many times she had only water for her own meal.

She had to take care of sick children and patch their threadbare clothes. Not a day passed without difficulty. She frequently spent many sleepless nights and skipped meals. Once she found rice

bran in a deserted Buddhist temple. About one month passed in this way. The children became weaker every day, and the number of sick children increased. Kim Jong Suk called on the guerrillas she had come with. But, the situation of those "Minsaengdan" suspects was hardly different from that of the children. The cold wind of the ultra-leftist anti-"Minsaengdan" campaign was blowing continuously in Maanshan.

However, they were only ones she could depend on.

"We must obtain food," she told them. "If we leave the children as they are, they will die in a few days. Please help me. Organize a small unit, and I will join it."

Tears gathered in her eyes when she said this.

The commander formed a small unit for obtaining food. It was not an easy decision for those "Minsaengdan" suspects.

The commander asked her to stay in the secret camp to take care of the children while the small unit was obtaining food. But she expressed her determination to follow the small unit, saying that she need not stay in the camp in a position not to supply a bowl of gruel to children. She asserted that if the unit had one person more, it would obtain that much more food. Kim Jong Suk was the only one who was not a "Minsaengdan" suspect. However, she did not hesitate to join them. At that moment, the children rushed to her and asked her not to go, reluctant to be separated from her. They stamped their feet, with tears in their eyes.

She followed the small unit leaving behind some grain obtained by emptying the knapsacks of the guerrillas.

The small unit went towards Fusong first, but changed direction and moved toward Linjiang because the enemy guard at Fusong was too strong, and the "Minsaengdan" suspects had been provided with only a few rounds of ammunition. A week after it left Maanshan, the small unit managed to obtain some grain in Mayihe village, 40 kilometres east of Linjiang. The residents of the village warmly welcomed the guerrillas.

Just as the unit was about to leave the village with the grain, a puppet Manchukuo army unit under the command of a Japanese instructor arrived. The unit slipped out of the village just before dawn, and occupied a favourable position halfway up a hill. The enemy pursued, but because the unit was short of ammunition, the guerrillas could start firing only when the enemy was under their very noses.

Kim Jong Suk was the first to fire. She shot dead the enemy machine-gunner. This caused the other enemy soldiers to threw themselves flat on their faces.

Kim Jong Suk shouted at the enemy:

"Don't throw away your lives as stooges of the Japanese imperialists! Throw away your rifles and ammunition, and run away!" "We do not harm Chinese."

Ri Tu Su, Kil Hwak Sil and other guerrillas joined her in shouting this appeal. Kim Jong Suk and other women guerrillas sang the Song of rebellion of Manchukuo Soldiers. As a result, the Manchukuo soldiers threw away their weapons and ammunition, and ran away.

The battle had ended in victory, and the guerrillas had obtained some grain, but their minds were heavy when they were preparing to return. What was waiting for them in the secret camp would be suspicion of being "Minsaengdan" members and looks of hostile reproach. Kim Jong Suk's mind was full of indignation and anxiety. Is it natural that the people who were so valiant in the battle against the enemy should fall again under the suspicion of being "Minsaengdan" members? How helpful will the grain we obtained today be? How can I get proper clothes for the children?

As she was returning to the secret camp with the small unit, a messenger reached them, and said that the Comrade Commander had come to Fusong and had sent for them.

The small unit members shouted for joy, and hugged each other. It was like a dream, so Kim Jong Suk asked the messenger

repeatedly: "Comrade messenger! Tell me. Tell me more details. How is the Comrade Commander? Where is he staying now?"

She fervently wished for the good health of Kim Il Sung everywhere, at all times and in all adversities.

The guerrillas hastened towards the Maanshan secret camp, where Kim Il Sung was staying.

They continued to march even at night, without resting before they reached Maanshan.

The children ran towards Kim Jong Suk, calling her, "Sister".

They wore new uniforms instead of their former ragged clothes. Kim Jong Suk was moved to tears at the sight.

Following a meeting in Mihunzhen, which discussed the organizing of a new division, Kim Il Sung heard from Pak Yong Sun about the situation of the CC members in Maanshan. No sooner had he arrived in Maanshan than he called on the children. Having seen their miserable situation, Kim Il Sung severely criticized the officers of the secret camp. He had cloth bought, spending 20 won his mother Kang Pan Sok had given him when he set out on the road of armed struggle. To supply every child with a new uniform, he sent an aide to Zhang Weihua in Fusong to obtain the cloth.

Feeling their uniforms, Kim Jong Suk said, "You children, you must prove yourself worthy of the General's great consideration. You must be true soldiers who follow and defend General Kim Il sung everywhere and at all times."

However, a furious wind was still blowing in the log cabin of the secret camp in Maanshan, when the small unit members arrived.

When Kim Jong Suk called on them, the chief of the secret camp appeared before them. In a threatened tone, he said that Kim Il Sung wanted to meet them, so they should behave properly, without forgetting their past record.

The guerrillas' hopes and expectations disappeared. From the first days they had been accused of being "Minsaengdan" suspects they used to deny the fact or protest, but nobody believed them, or, worse still, had even listened to them. Only "statements" and "confessions" had been demanded, and they had piled up higher and higher.

That was why none of them dared to look up when Kim Il Sung came into the barrack room. When he asked if they had really joined the "Minsaengdan," none answered. When he asked again, one man replied that he had really joined it. It was total desperation stemming from the belief that nobody could deliver him from trouble even if he told the truth.

Kim Il Sung left, having ascertained the situation. Kim Hwak Sil, Jang Chol Gu and other women guerrillas sobbed in desperation, and in grief at the false charge brought against them.

Kim Jong Suk, who had fought together with Kim Hwak Sil from their days in the Fuyan guerrilla zone, could not control her indignation.

She explained to the guerrillas:

"Whom will you depend on? Do you believe that your innocence will be proved by the people who accused you, using the piles of 'Minsaengdan' documents? Why are you so intimidated, now that you are in a position to tell General Kim Il Sung about your vexation? Only the General can deliver you from groundless suspicion. You must trust and follow only General Kim Il Sung."

Kim Hwak Sil grasped her hands and rushed out of the room. She stood behind a tree for a while, and then appeared before Kim Il Sung, who was returning to the log cabin with a heavy heart.

"General, I am not a 'Minsaengdan' member. I was accused of being a 'Minsaengdan' member only because I married a 'Minsaengdan' suspect. But, my husband was not a 'Minsaengdan'

member. How could we become spies for the Japs? Both Jang Chol Gu and I were falsely indicted because of our husbands."

Kim Il Sung returned to the "Minsaengdan" suspects together with her and gave them a hearing for a long time. After listening to them, he asked a few people who were not under suspicion of being "Minsaengdan" what they thought about these "Minsaengdan" suspects.

Nobody but Kim Jong Suk stood up without hesitation to reply.

Kim Jong Suk told him that she did not know what was written in the documents, but she knew well their determination to devote their very lives to the revolution. She assured him of their honesty, saying that they were never "Minsaengdan" members.

Her trust in revolutionary comrades was constant in any adversity.

After hearing the testimonies of the "Minsaengdan" suspects, Kim Il Sung said, "You can make a fresh start from now on. I believe in your determination to fight on the road of revolution, rather than in the piles of 'written statements', 'written investigations' and 'evidence'". He had these documents piled up in front of over 100 "Minsaengdan" suspects, and set fire to them. It was a resolute step only Kim Il Sung, who was determined to risk his life to overcome the crisis in the Korean revolution, could take.

Presiding over the burning of the "Minsaengdan" documents, Kim Il Sung declared that he would admit all "Minsaengdan" suspects into a newly-organized division. He appointed Jang Chol Gu, one of the "Minsaengdan" suspects, to be a cook at Headquarters. He gave orders for new uniforms to be supplied to all the guerrillas of the main force unit, using cloth obtained through Zhang Weihua in Fusong.

Together with other women guerrillas, Kim Jong Suk herself made uniforms.

She was deeply moved by the news that Kim Il Sung had declared he would lead the children with the unit, as they wished. Afterwards, the CC members and the "Minsaengdan" suspects in Maanshan grew up in the crucible of revolution into the reliable backbone of the Korean revolution and left a noble record which would remain in the history of national liberation for ever.

Kim Jong Suk the 4 th Company of the 7th Regiment of the main force unit.

This company had the duty of guarding Headquarters, among other tasks.

SPRING IN MANJIANG

Kim Jong Suk greeted the spring of 1936 in Manjiang, her first spring in the unit personally led by Kim Il Sung.

The main force unit of the KPRA camped in the vicinity of Manjiang on the way to Donggang. While camping there, the guerrillas had haircuts and made preparations for the next march.

Kim Jong Suk was washing with another woman guerrilla in a stream meandering through the camping area. The stream awoke memories of her birthplace.

She quietly sang a song, which she used to sing in her childhood in her old hometown. Her comrade sang together with her.

While inspecting the camp area, Kim Il Sung heard the sound of the song and came over to the stream.

"You, too, long for your native place, don't you?" he said, when they finished the song. Both women guerrillas sprang to their feet, flustered. Kim Il Sung told them about the scenic beauty of Mangyongdae, his birthplace. He then strolled along the stream,

letting his thoughts carry him back to the past and quietly singing a song, called Nostalgia:

As I was leaving home,
Mother in tears at the gate wished me a safe journey.
Oh, her voice still rings my ears!

Not far away from my home flows a stream,
And my little brothers were romping about.
Oh, their images swim before my eyes!

Kim Jong Suk listened to the song, and tears came to her eyes. From that time on, this song became her favourite, and she used to sing it both in joy and in sorrow.

At the welcoming ceremony held in Chongjin after she returned to the liberated homeland, she sang this song too. That day, by the stream at Manjiang, she told Kim Il Sung about her family.

After listening to her, he kept silent for a while, and then said, "As you said, we are in the same circumstances, so we cannot give up the revolution even if we want to. People like us must stand in the van of revolution, before all the others. We must live and fight for the revolution."

Kim Il Sung paused in his stride, and asked her about her education. She replied that she had had no opportunity to attend regular school, but had studied at an evening school. He gave a slight nod and said, "You must study hard if you are to gain successes in the revolution. We are proud of you women guerrillas, who stand in the sacred revolutionary front with guns in your hands. You must be conscious of your great responsibility, and become excellent women fighters and women revolutionaries."

That night, she sat near a campfire and wrote down what he had said and the words of Nostalgia. These were valuable teachings which became guidelines for her throughout her life.

The spring she greeted in Manjiang became a turning-point in her life, as she had lived in agony and misfortune, the pain of loss and deep-rooted grievances from her childhood.

After leaving Manjiang, the unit arrived in Donggang in late April. The Donggang secret camp was located on a plateau 1,100 metres above sea level.

In this place was held the Donggang meeting, a landmark in the history of Korea's national liberation struggle. A platoon of the 4th company of the 7th Regiment undertook the responsibility of preparing the meeting place. Kim Jong Suk took part in this preparation work, while guiding the delegates and patriots coming from different areas, and looking after them in the secret camp.

The meeting opened on May 1, 1936, and on May 5, Kim Il Sung proclaimed the foundig of the Association for the Restoration of the Fatherland (ARF), the first anti-Japanese national united front organization in Korea. The participants in the meeting elected Kim Il Sung by acclamation to be the Chairman of the ARF. This was a historic event which declared both to Korea and the rest of the world that the Korean people acclaimed Kim Il Sung as the leader of the nation. This was what she said first to the orderlies and cooks after coming out of the meeting hall:

"Wonderful news! The Comrade Commander has been elected Chairman of the Association for the Restoration of the Fatherland."

Kim Jong Suk understood the historical significance of this event more profoundly than the other guerrillas.

Studying The Inaugural Declaration of the ARF and The Ten-Point Programme of the ARF written by Kim Il Sung, she

perceived anew his great idea for achieving national liberation transcending classes, political views and religions, as well as his idea of "The People are My God." She also imagined the future, when all the Korean people would flock to join the anti-Japanese war, united as one behind General Kim Il Sung.

After the meeting, she mimeographed The Ten-Point Programme of the ARF in the printing shop of the Headquarters Secretariat, and distributed copies throughout the unit. She grasped its contents long before anyone else did. She also set an example among the main force unit guerrillas in making preparations to explain its contents in detail among the people.

In those days, Kim Jong Suk frequently said:

"The KPRA soldiers are not only combatants who fight against the enemy with arms in their hands, but also information workers and Organizers who arm the people with the idea of the Comrade Commander, and mobilize them in the struggle to put it into effect. Therefore, when they face the enemy, they must fight valiantly, like lions, and when they go among the people, they must be excellent information workers."

HER DISTINGUISHED SERVICES IN FUSONG

After the Donggang meeting, Kim Il Sung stepped up the work of establishing the Paektusan base in order to expand the armed struggle into the homeland. To this end, he sent the KPRA main force unit to the Fusong area to gain military supremacy over the enemy. In a matter of only a few months after the meeting, victories were gained in many battles, including those of Laoling, Xinancha, Xigang and the Fusong county town.

On June 16, 1936, in Laoling, Kim Jong Suk took part for the first time in a battle which was fought under the personal command of Kim Il Sung. As a high pass on the boundary between Fusong and Linjiang counties, Laoling was located on the main route connecting the area along the Amnok River and the hinterland of Manchuria.

Kim Il Sung learned that the "Jingan army", the most vicious unit in the puppet Manchukuo army, would pass Laoling, and secretly deployed the KPRA units in a favourable position.

Women guerrillas led by Kim Jong Suk and the 4th Company lay in ambush on a mountain slope 100 metres from the road.

At about six a.m., the observation post on top of the mountain signaled that the enemy had appeared. Sometime later, two companies of the enemy began to enter the ambush area.

When the whole of the enemy force had been lured into the ambush, Kim Il Sung ordered the guerrillas to fire. Kim Jong Suk once more demonstrated her skill as a crack shot, and hit even an enemy soldier who was trying to hide behind a rock.

Kim Il Sung then ordered a bayonet charge. Even in hand-to-hand fighting with bayonets, Kim Jong Suk and the other women guerrillas distinguished themselves, killing many enemy soldiers, and capturing large numbers of weapons. They won the admiration of their male colleagues, as well as of Kim Il Sung himself.

Kim Jong Suk demonstrated her profound understanding of Kim Il Sung's tactics once again during the battle at Xinancha on July 10, 1936.

Xinancha was a comparably large internment village of over 300 houses. In the centre of the village, defended by a log fence several metres high, were located the Manchukuo police substation and enemy barracks. From the top of the mountain where the unit was positioned, the guerrillas had a bird's eye view of Xinancha.

One of the guerrillas told Kim Jong Suk that the attack on the internment village would be launched at night. When she asked him why, he said that in his experience a sudden attack could only be ensured at night, and that only a sudden attack would make it possible to occupy the enemy barracks. But Kim Jong Suk understood Kim Il Sung's strategic thinking. This was that at night the enemy sharpened his vigilance, closing the gate, but in daytime they were relaxed, and the gate was open while they cleaned their weapons. Sure enough, Kim Il Sung ordered a daytime attack. The Xinancha battle ended in victory within 20 to 30 minutes. The KPRA men gave a propaganda performance before the local people before withdrawing smoothly. The Xinancha battle was soon followed by the Xigang battle. The enemy stationed a regiment of the puppet Manchukuo army in Xigang, at the approach to the primeval forest of Mt. Paektu. They were building up this area into the frontline for suppressing the guerrillas. The enemy built a log fence several metres high around the village, and dug a deep moat outside the fence. Watchtowers were built at the four corners of the fence, those in northeast and southeast having underground structures and the other two being of two storeys each.

Based on the results of reconnaissance, Kim Il Sung made a resolution to annihilate the enemy at a stroke by using incendiary and rifle volleys and agitation shouts against the enemy simultaneously.

The incendiary devices were oil-soaked wads of cotton with thorns fixed in them.

Kim Jong Suk noticed that the thorns were too short and there were not enough of them, in which case the wads might not stick to the roofs of the buildings. Such a little detail might decide the result of the battle.

After she pointed this out to them, the guerrillas used more and longer thorns. As a result, in spite of a sudden drizzle which made

the roofs of the enemy barracks wet and slippery, the fire wads stuck to the roofs. They made the barracks a sea of fire in an instant, and the entire regiment of the Manchukuo army surrendered, turning over all its combat equipment and war supplies to the KPRA unit.

In the attack on the Fusong county town on August 17, 1936, commanded by Kim Il Sung in his tactical aim of gaining absolute supremacy over the enemy in the northwest area of Mt. Paektu, Kim Jong Suk rendered a distinguished service as an anti-Japanese heroine. Fusong was a place of strategic importance the enemy distinguished from other county towns around Mt. Paektu, as well as the centre for "peace maintenance in Dongbiandao." Stationed there were different armed forces such as Kwantung Army units, Manchukuo army units and police forces, as well as the Takahashi "crack unit". In the attack on the Fusong county town many Chinese nationalist anti-Japanese units such as Wan Shun's unit and the first detachment of Wu Yicheng's unit took part.

The attack on the Fusong county town started at two a.m. The 7 th Regiment, to which Kim Jong Suk belonged, approached the eastern fortress secretly, and captured the guards there without firing a shot. The regiment then advanced towards Xiaonanmen.

Kim Il Sung foresaw that the battle would be protracted and moved the command post near Xiaonanmen. He summoned Kim Jong Suk, and instructed her to take up a position near the eastern fortress with seven other women guerrillas and prepare breakfast. The position was situated in a place where the enemy would not see the smoke from the cooking fires.

The Chinese anti-Japanese units which had attacked from the east and north of the county town encountered stubborn resistance, and retreated, drawing the enemy towards Xiaonanmen. The battle for Xiaonamen became fiercer unexpectedly, and an unfavourable situation was created owing to the disorderly retreat.

Kim Il Sung was resolved to lure the enemy out of the walled town and destroy him, by withdrawing the unit onto the eastern hill and the ridges of Xiaomalugou.

Deceived by his tactics, the enemy opened the gate in the defensive wall and ran out. An enemy platoon rushed to occupy the place where Kim Jong Suk and the cooking unit were preparing breakfast for the guerrillas. This spot would enable the enemy to block the retreat of the KPRA unit coming from Xiaonanmen.

Kim Jong Suk appealed to the other women guerrillas:

"All of us must be ready to risk our lives. Let's ensure the security of Headquarters at the cost of our lives." She killed the enemy machine-gunner with the first shot from her Mauser. The other women guerrillas then fired a volley. Kim Jong Suk killed more than ten enemy soldiers with shots from a Mauser in one hand and another pistol in the other. The women guerrillas halted an enemy charge by throwing hand-grenades. Eventually, the 4th Company of the 7th Regiment came running up, and annihilated the enemy by cross fire. In the meantime, the main force withdrew safely and lay in ambush to totally destroy the notorious Takahashi "crack unit."

In his reminiscences With the Century, Kim Il Sung writes: "I should say that my command post was saved by the heroic efforts of the women soldiers, who checked the enemy at their position that day. If they had failed to contain the enemy, we would have been unable to climb the hill to forestall the enemy."

After creating favourable conditions for building the Paektusan base through many battles, the main force unit visited the Manjiang village again, and stayed there for a few days. Kim Jong Suk explained the contents of the Ten-Point Programme of the ARF to the villagers, and launched artistic activities.

The KPRA main force unit left a deep impression among the people of Manjiang through a variety of performances, including the revolutionary drama The Sea of Blood. Finally, the unit started a march towards the Mt. Paektu area.

THE SECRET CAMP ON MT. PAEKTU

The main force unit of the KPRA started a march towards the border area on the Amnok River amid a rousing send-off from the people of Manjiang.

They crossed a boundless primeval forest, before they reached Duoguling, a high and rugged pass which was located southwest of Mt. Paektu.

Encouraged by Kim Il Sung's words that if they scaled this pass, they would get a distant view of their homeland, the soldiers climbed the mountain, forgetting their exhaustion.

At last they heard his resonant voice. "Comrades!" he cried. "The homeland is in sight." Kim Jong Suk ran up to the top of the pass hand in hand with other women guerrillas.

They could see Mt. Paektu, the grand spectacle of the snow-capped ancestral mountain, the symbol of the long history of Korea, and the green mountain ranges stretching from it.

Oh, dear homeland! They had long fought with rifle in hand in eager anticipation of setting foot on Korean soil.

Kim Jong Suk asked Kim Il Sung where Hoeryong was. He pointed northeast far over Mt. Paektu.

He said that Hoeryong was located on the other side of the Tuman River, beyond Mt. Paektu. Kim Jong Suk looked far over the mountain with deep emotion and excitement, as he pointed.

Kim Il Sung said, indicating the homeland on the shores of the Amnok River: "Look at that boundless sea of forests and rugged ravines with cliffs on both sides. This wonderful natural fortress stretching from the summit of Mt. Paektu, the ancestral mountain of our country, will provide us with a theatre of our sacred future struggle. We will establish secret camps deep in the forests at the foot of Mt. Paektu, using the natural fortress of this vast forest, and unite the people firmly into a national liberation front, so as to raise the torch of national restoration."

Bearing his teachings in mind, she looked back upon the road the Korean revolution had traversed to Mt. Paektu. It was indeed a course of a bloody struggle, which had to break through a forest of bayonets.

In this course, the strength of the KPRA, the leading force of the Korean revolution, increased beyond comparison, and the ARF, the standing anti-Japanese national united front, was organized, under which different classes were uniting.

If the KPRA settled down in the Mt. Paektu area, it would be possible to unite all the patriotic forces in the homeland, and accomplish the cause of national liberation by means of nationwide resistance. This was Kim Il Sung's plan, and he already made a resolution after the Donggang meeting to establish a new revolutionary base in the Mt. Paektu area. He assigned the task of leading the advance party to Kim Ju Hyon and Ri Tong Hak.

On the day of their departure to the Mt. Paektu area to select the site for the establishment of the secret camp on Mt. Paektu, Kim Ju Hyon expressed his intention to go alone, however hard his work might be, and to leave Company Commander Ri Tong Hak with the unit to guard Headquarters.

Kim Jong Suk said that the establishment of the secret bases on Mt. Paektu was a very important task relating to the Korean revolution as a whole, and so Kim Il Sung had decided to send the

two men in advance, as a special mission. She requested them to exert all their efforts for implementation of their task without having to worry about safeguarding Headquarters.

Consequently, Kim Ju Hyon and Ri Tong Hak left for the Mt. Paektu area for field investigation before the others.

Kim Jong Suk poured all her energy into the work of establishing the Paektusan Base, after the unit arrived in the Changbai area after coming down Duoguling.

She took an active part in both military and political activities in the surrounding areas of Mt. Paektu. In particular, she rendered distinguished services in the battles of Dadeshui, Xiaodeshui, Donggang in Shiwudaogou, Tianqiaogou, Longchuanli and Erzhongdian-Ershidaogouin. She put a lot of effort into political work to unite the people behind the ARF in the villages of Xinchangdong, Jizhoude, Tianshangshui, Huanggongdong, and other places.

At dawn on September 20, 1936, the unit led by Kim Il Sung left the Huanggongdong village in Ershidaogou for the northeast area.

Kim Ju Hyon acted as the unit's guide. Kim Jong Suk shouldered a heavy burden, including cooking utensils, but she did not feel tired, considering that this march was the first step in carrying out Kim Il Sung's plan for national liberation. Instead, she helped the other women guerrillas with their burdens.

The unit marched on through the forest, and arrived in the Sobaeksu valley in the evening of that day.

Next morning, a meeting of the commanding officers of the main force unit was held in the Headquarters tent. After discussing many other questions, the meeting seriously took up once again the establishment of the Paektusan Base. This task bore a double significance: the construction of secret camps and the building of revolutionary organizations.

The following morning, the construction of secret camps started. Kim Jong Suk took an active part in this work.

The Paektusan Secret Camp No. 1 in the Sobaeksu valley was the centre of the network of the secret camps in the Mt. Paektu area. Kim Il Sung personally chose the site. This was the Paektusan Secret Camp which is called the sacred place of revolution at present among the Korean people.

Kim Jong Suk explained the significance of the construction of the Paektusan Secret Camp No. 1 to the guerrillas who were building the camp, and devoted all her energy to this work.

When the construction was complete, Kim Jong Suk peeled bark from trees in the surrounding area and wrote meaningful slogans on them:

"A General Star has risen on Mt. Paektu. The star illuminates the three thousand ri of Korea," "Oppose the predominance of men over women. Long live the emancipation of women! Humiliated Korean women, rise up in the struggle against the Japanese!"

With the construction of the Paektusan Secret Camp in the Sobaeksu valley, the central leadership base of the Korean revolution was built and made it possible to realize overall leadership over the Korean revolution. Following the construction of the Paektusan Secret Camp, other secret camps were built in many places in the Mt. Paektu area, such as Saja Peak, Mt. Kom, Mt. Sono, Mt. Kanbaek, Mudu Hill and Soyonji Peak. In the west Jiandao area, satellite secret camps were built in Heixiazigou, Diyangzi, Erdaogang, Hengshan, Limingshui, Fuhoushui, Qingfeng, and other places.

After the building of the secret camps on Mt. Paektu Kim Jong Suk worked hard to build a network of underground organizations.

When he left for Heixiazigou after guiding the establishment of the secret camps on Mt. Paektu, Kim Il Sung

assigned Kim Jong Suk the task of taking stock of the situation in the areas along the Amnok River.

From June 1936, ARF branch organizations had been formed under the guidance of Kim Ju Hyon in the surrounding areas of Mt. Paektu, including Rimyongsu.

Kim Jong Suk dispatched liaison agents to those organizations to ascertain the situation, population composition, ideological climate, and activities of the organizations in the areas along the Amnok River including Hyesan, particularly in the surrounding areas of Mt. Paektu. She also assigned them the detailed task of expanding and strengthening the organizations and making them enthusiastic in sending supplies to the KPRA.

As a result, the ARF network was rapidly expanded in the area surrounding Mt. Paektu, including Rimyongsu and Mt. Phothae.

In those days, many fighters came to the secret camps from the homeland to meet Kim Il Sung. Among them were Ri Je Sun and Pak Tal.

One day Ri Je Sun happened to pass by the women soldiers' barracks, accompanied by Company Commander Ri Tong Hak.

He stopped to watch Kim Jong Suk cleaning her rifle. Ri Tong Hak introduced her to him, and said, citing several cases, that the whole unit was proud and envious of her as a crack shot.

Ri Je Sun asked her how she had been able to acquire such wonderful marksmanship.

She simply replied, "If I fail to kill the enemy at the first shot, the enemy will kill me. Moreover, we accompany the General in dangerous situations. So I am always enthusiastic about shooting practice, striving to kill the enemy with one bullet, no matter when or where he may appear... .

"I think that all the guerrillas of the KPRA should devote body and soul to defending the great General and the Korean revolution."

Ri Je Sun said that he had learned the secret of crack-shot marksmanship in the secret camp, and that he was determined to become a marksman protecting Kim Il Sung's safety and defending the headquarters of the revolution. He was true to his word until the last moment of his life. He kept the secrets of the location of Headquarters and his organization until he died on the gallows.

Before leaving the secret camp, Ri Je Sun expressed to Kim Il Sung his wish to try on a guerrilla uniform just once. Kim Jong Suk learnt about this from Ri Tong Hak, so she chose a uniform that would fit Ri Je Sun well, and prepared it for him to wear.

Pak Tal[13], who met Kim Il Sung through the introduction of Ri Je Sun, gained a deep impression about Kim Jong Suk during his stay in the secret camp. Kim Jong Suk took good care of him at all times, and was always cheerful. Pak Tal once asked her if the guerrilla life was too much for her. While staying in the secret camp, he had witnessed of an arduous life, guerrillas involving continuous battles and marches.

Kim Jong Suk replied, "There are many difficulties and hardships in a guerrilla life. That is why our cause is called an arduous revolution. Nevertheless, no matter how hard and difficult it may be, I think about how we can restore the country and satisfy our desire to avenge our fathers, mothers, brothers and sisters when we fight following the General, taking delight in hardships. Then I rise up again, and find it an honour to take part in the revolution facing any adversity. I have made up my mind to follow the road of revolution unswervingly, and devote my life to this cause."

The images of the Paektusan Secret Camp, the heart of the Korean revolution, that Pak Tal cherished in his mind from that day were those of Kim Il Sung and Kim Jong Suk. For this reason, when he met Kim Jong Suk near the Chonsangsu cave, while escaping after the "Hyesan incident,"[14] he recognized her at once,

and ran to her calling out, "Comrade Kim Jong Suk," although he had not seen her for two years.

When Pak Tal came to Pyongyang as a cripple, soon after the liberation of the country, Kim Jong Suk warmly welcomed him, and took good care of him.

She frequently called at his house next to her residence and encouraged him by recollecting their meetings in the Mt. Paektu Secret Camp and the Chonsangsu cave.

Kim Jong Bu, whom Kim Il Sung describes as a "patriotic landowner" in his reminiscences, was once under the care of Kim Jong Suk. Kim Jong Bu stayed in the Hengshan Secret Camp at the Paektusan Base for several months from the summer of 1936. Some guerrillas complained about serving him with white rice when Kim Il Sung was living on maize porridge. Kim Jong Suk told them that Kim Jong Bu was a patriot, and explained Kim Il Sung's views on the anti-Japanese national united front, the idea that the liberation of the country could be achieved only when those with strength give strength, those with knowledge give knowledge and those with money give money.

Leaving the secret camp, Kim Jong Bu told Kim Il Sung that he would devote his life to supporting the KPRA, and that he would stand by the side of Kim Il Sung come what may. Afterwards he did indeed devote his all to assisting the KPRA.

Kim Jong Suk directed great efforts to making the guerrillas who had joined the unit personally led by Kim Il Sung from other units achieve the befitting the guerrillas of the unit.

In those days, the small units which had been operating in different places came to the Paektusan Base at the call of Kim Il Sung to join the main force unit. Some guerrillas were negligent about wearing their new uniforms, and others often neglected to shave.

Kim Jong Suk explained to them that the main force unit had grown up into ever-victorious iron ranks since it moved only following the orders and instructions of Kim Il Sung. Therefore, she continued, they should voluntarily observe the discipline and order set forth by Kim Il Sung and assume an appearance befitting his unit.

Under the care of Kim Jong Suk, the new recruits began to look like the guerrillas of Kim Il Sung's own unit, not only in their disciplined life but also in their appearance. The main force unit of the KPRA under the personal command of Kim Il Sung was called among the people the "students' unit," and the enemy knew as soon as he came across the site of a campfire that the place had been the camping site of Kim Il Sung's unit, and fled in fear. This was in considerable measure attributable to the efforts made by Kim Jong Suk.

Many recruits who joined the unit in the Changbai area experienced much trouble in accustoming themselves to guerrilla life. Ma Tong Hui was one of them.

He had flat feet and this made it difficult for him to act in concert with the other guerrillas, whose life was a succession of marching and fighting. Sometimes, he was too exhausted to notice that his trousers were falling down.

Kim Jong Suk walked together with him on marches, to encourage him, and helped him improve his marksmanship. She also explained to him the revolutionary ideas of Kim Il Sung in detail.

Ma Tong Hui grew up into an excellent guerrilla of the KPRA. He was valiant in battle and a model in study. If he heard that a study session was to be held, he would be the first to arrive.

He carried out many underground work tasks assigned to him by Kim Il Sung personally at the Paektusan Secret Camp.

Ma Tong Hui respected very much Kim Jong Suk, who understood most correctly and profoundly the ideas and intention of Kim Il Sung, and devoted her all to the comrades as a famous crack shot of the unit. He tried to follow her example in all aspects. In particular, he never forgot throughout his life what she said during a march to Fusong in March 1937.

The expedition to Fusong was an arduous trek. The guerrillas were so exhausted that they collapsed on the ground as soon as they were ordered to take a rest, and went to sleep straight after making a camp fire. Ma Tong Hui fell asleep next to the camp fire, and sparks ignited his cap.

Kim Jong Suk snatched the cap off, without waking him. She beat the flames out and began patching the cap.

Ma Tong Hui told her that he had never worn a cap, even in his primary-school days. He was the top of his class at primary school, but his family had not enough money to buy a cap for him.

One day, the teacher gave the highest marks to a certain pupil just because he had an influential father. So indignant was Ma Tong Hui at the unjust behaviour of the teacher, that he quit the school. Ma Tong Hui's father, who did not know this, bought him a school cap the same day. "The school cap was not one for me to put on, and the school was not the place for me to go to," Ma Tong Hui said. "The guerrilla unit is, indeed, a revolutionary school for me, and the military cap is the cap for me." Kim Jong Suk put a red star badge on his cap and said, returning it: "I hope this red star will become a star shining in your mind which will lead you to be a revolutionary fighter unfailingly loyal to Kim Il Sung in the arduous struggle."

When Ma Tong Hui was arrested by the enemy afterwards, he kept the secret of the Paektusan Secret Camp by biting off his own tongue, and died a heroic death.

By her own example, Kim Jong Suk instilled in the guerrillas the truth that to defend the security of Kim Il Sung was the foremost task for revolutionaries.

She volunteered to stand on guard at nights no matter what the weather, and even when all the other guerrillas had fallen asleep from exhaustion after a forced march.

The women guerrillas thought that she woke up at dawn every day to prepare the morning meal. However, one dawn they saw her walking around the log cabin of Headquarters with a rifle on her shoulder, and knew that she woke up early every day for the safety of Headquarters.

Before the guerrillas went on sentry duty, she used to emphasize to them: "You must not forget at any time where Commander Kim Il Sung is. In these hard and complicated circumstances, our bodies must be a bulletproof wall to defend him."

On January 3, 1937, Kim Jong Suk joined the Communist Party. This was a turning-point in the revolutionary life of a heroine who was determined to devote herself to the glorious struggle for the restoration of the homeland and the happiness of the people.

4. IN THE ENEMY AREAS

IN TAOQUANLI

With a view to further consolidating the ARF organizations and rapidly expanding them on a national scale, Kim Il Sung dispatched experienced political workers to various regions, including those in the homeland.

In mid-March 1937, when the unit arrived in the Xigang area, he assigned Kim Jong Suk the task of conducting underground political work in the Taoquanli-Sinpha area.

Kim Il Sung instructed her to base herself in Taoquanli, and improve the work of the ARF in the Xiagangqu area before opening a route to Sinpha and expanding the network of the ARF organizations in the east coast areas of Korea. "I'm confident that you will succeed in this challenging task. Whenever you face difficulties, please rely on your comrades and the people," he added.

"I will carry out the task without fail and return to the unit, Comrade Commander."

Her reply, though short, reflected her firm determination to prove herself worthy of the trust and expectation of Kim Il Sung in the face of all trials and difficulties.

Concentrating their oppressive military forces on the border area along the Amnok River, the Japanese imperialists made

frantic efforts to check the thrust of the KPRA into the homeland. In addition, they instigated their stooges affiliated with the "Concord Society"[15], to launch a disinformation campaign about the KPRA, and dampen the revolutionary zeal of the people.

Kim Jong Suk left Headquarters for Changbai.

Staying for a fortnight in a rendezvous eight kilometres from Tianshangshui, she helped the work of the ARF chapter there and at the same time made preparations for underground work, reading newspapers and studying the situation in Taoquanli and Xiagangqu and the Sinpha area in the homeland, with the help of Kim Jae Su and other underground organization members.

In April that year, in the guise of an immigrant from Musan named Om Ok Sun, she went to Taoquanli.

Taoquanli, consisting of several hamlets, was a fairly large mountainous village with about 200 households.

She first met Jong Tong Chol, the village head and a member of the underground organization. Jong explained the state of affairs in Taoquanli, the composition of its inhabitants and the activities of the underground organizations.

The operations of the ARF chapters and branches formed in Taoquanli, Yaofangzi and several other villages were sluggish at that time. Training the hard core, extending revolutionary influence among the people, expanding the organizations and many other problems faced Kim Jong Suk.

Jong Tong Chol looked delighted. "Now that you, an operative dispatched by General Kim Il Sung, have come, I feel confident," he said.

Kim Jae Su, too, felt relieved to meet her.

Kim Jong Suk told them that she would do farm work to mix with the people, adding that Kim Il Sung had instructed that nothing would be impossible for revolutionaries if they won the respect and trust of the people, and moved their hearts.

She worked in the fields in the daytime with the villagers, and called at their houses in the evening to get acquainted with them. A week later, she had familiarized herself with the names of the houses, like Pukchong house and Kapsan house, and had learned by heart most of the names of the villagers.

At nights she went to the well to practise putting a water jar on her head and walking with it on her head. She also practised swinging for several nights for the Churinal festival[16] (the fifth day of the fifth month by the lunar calendar-Tr.), so that she could pass herself off as a village woman.

One summer day, Jong Tong Chol arranged a party in his house in honour of his son's birthday. Attending the party were political workers dispatched from the KPRA and the members of secret organizations, as well as policemen, village heads of other villages and secret agents of the enemy.

To disguise the operatives, Kim Jong Suk arranged with Jong Tong Chol to let them bow to each other. She herself knelt down in front of Pak Jong Suk and made a bow, saying, "How do you do?" It was for that moment, she had practised bowing with the help of Jong Tong Chol.

Kim Jong Suk behaved like a true daughter, granddaughter or sister of the people in Taoquanli; she never acted like their teacher. When she dropped in at a house, she did not leave it without doing something like chopping firewood, fetching, water, or pounding grain. When a newly-married lady, who did not know how to make an unlined summer jacket, wanted to make one for her husband, she helped her for several hours. Once a woman was quite concerned about her only son. Having lost his appetite due to a severe illness, the boy told his mother that he wanted to eat fish soup. When she heard this, Kim Jong Suk caught a fish for him.

Kim Jong Suk became a woman never to be forgotten by the villagers of Taoquanli after she rescued a girl from the jaws of

death. One day, the landlord in Liugedong banished the girl, his kitchen maid, who was suffering from typhoid fever, to a hut in the mountains. Her neighbours, to say nothing of her relatives, expressed great pity for her but nobody dared to take care of the girl for fear of infection. On hearing about this, Kim Jong Suk went to the hut without hesitation. At the miserable sight of the girl, who was unconscious due to a high fever and was dying in a lonely hut, Kim Jong Suk pictured the people in the homeland who were writhing in agony. Later, some villagers came to the hut, to find Kim Jong Suk feeding the girl gruel spoonful by spoonful.

When the villagers returned home, Jong Tong Chol and other organization members urged her to leave the hut. They worried that the important tasks assigned to them by Headquarters might end in failure if Kim Jong Suk got infected by the girl.

Kim Jong Suk smiled and comforted them, saying, "Don't worry, and please go back. If we are afraid to save a child at the risk of our lives, how can we restore the country and rescue our fellow countrymen? I am determined to sacrifice my life for the sake of the people."

Living in the hut with the girl, Kim Jong Suk eventually made her recover.

The villagers regarded Kim Jong Suk as a "godsend" to the poor, and began to call her "Dear Ok Sun". This showed the trust and love of the villagers who accepted her as an inseparable friend, their true daughter and sister.

One day in mid-April, Kim Jong Suk met the heads of secret organizations in Xiagangqu, and told them that it was not right for them to remain passive on the plea of intensified reactionary offensive of the enemy. She told them to be bold in breaking through the enemy's offensive and positive in solidly building up and expanding the revolutionary organizations.

She first educated the young men in the Taoquanli area patiently, and organized the Anti-Japanese Youth League

organizations in several villages with these young people as the hard core.

She directed particular efforts at rallying the women in Xiagangqu around the organizations, one of the weak points in the work of the revolutionary organizations in the area. Rallying women was of great significance in expanding the ARF organizations, and yet the revolutionary organizations in the area were despondent about their failure to improve work with women.

Taking stock of the situation, Kim Jong Suk led the underground organization members to bring revolutionary influence to bear on their mothers, wives and sisters, so that the latter became the hard core in transforming all the village women in a revolutionary fashion. She decided to educate Ri Jong Ae, wife of an ARF member, as a hard-core member of the organization, and frequented her house. Ri's father, though bedridden for several years, disapproved of women learning to read or engaging in social affairs. Kim Jong Suk felt that she had to get familiar with Ri's family members and first exert a good influence on the old man.

She intentionally visited Ri's house-either to grind her unhulled rice on the treadmill in the yard of the house, to borrow this or that, or to serve the old man tasty food she had cooked. She would help Ri in her work, fetching water and chopping firewood. She told Ri to take good care of her father, who had grown old and become sick from hard work, and helped her to look after him. She nursed the old man as devotedly as she would have done her own father. The old man gradually became closer to Kim Jong Suk than to his own daughter. Ri, entertaining respect for Kim Jong Suk for her sincerity toward her own father, began to regard her as her own sister.

Kim Jong Suk taught Ri how to read and write, and how to sing revolutionary songs to awaken her to class consciousness. She

educated her all the time while picking edible herbs, or turning millstones or operating the treadmill.

Under her guidance, Ri Jong Ae, who had thought it was her fate to be poor, was brought to class consciousness gradually.

In step with the development of her ideological consciousness, Kim Jong Suk told her about General Kim Il Sung, who was fighting with the Japanese aggressors in the Mt. Paektu area at the head of the KPRA. She told her how the General had founded the anti-Japanese guerrilla army and how the guerrillas were fighting. She also explained to her the Ten-Point Programme of the ARF. Before long, Ri said that she would like to fight the Japanese as a member of the guerrilla unit. Kim Jong Suk reasoned with her that she was mistaken to think that she could fight the Japanese only by joining the guerrillas, and told her what she could do to fight them in her own village. To begin with, she asked Ri to buy in the market in Sinpha a few pairs of shoes to be sent to the guerrillas. Next, she assigned her the task of scouting the movements of the Jingan army stationed there. In the course of this, Ri grew into a courageous operative.

Kim Jong Suk trained several village women in this way as hard-core operatives, and transformed other village women in a revolutionary way by motivating the hard core.

Her efforts culminated in a meeting on April 20 to form a Women's Association in Taoquanli under her guidance. Declaring the formation of the Women's Association in Taoquanli, she said:

"We are all soldiers of General Kim Il Sung and revolutionary comrades who fight for the restoration of the motherland under his leadership. We shall share life and death, weal and woe in the face of all hardships, and remain loyal to the General."

Ri Jong Ae, who until a month previously had been too shy to utter a word, and shuddered at the sight of an enemy rifle, was elected chairwoman of the association. She thus embarked on the road of the sacred anti-Japanese war.

Kim Jong Suk closed the meeting with the following words:

"General Kim Il Sung is the sun of our nation. Let us all become rays of that sun."

In this way, Kim Jong Suk brought up a number of leading elements, and ceaselessly expanded and cemented organizations by relying on these elements. In the short period of time since her arrival, many hot-blooded young men had rallied around the Anti-Japanese Youth League, and an anti-Japanese children's association, anti-Japanese elders' association and paramilitary corps were formed.

Availing herself of formal gatherings held in the house of Jong Tong Chol, Kim Jong Suk met operatives from the guerrilla army and messengers from the secret organizations in other localities, who called at the house.

In the meantime, she traveled to several areas in Xiagangqu to guide the underground revolutionary organizations and sent the hard-core revolutionary workers she had trained to their friends and relatives in the vicinity of Taoquanli to educate and bring the youth and other people to classconsciousness. As a result of her organizational and political work, the organizations affiliated to the ARF rapidly gained footholds in the wide areas of Xiagangqu and Shanggangqu, as well as Taoquanli.

Kim Jong Suk educated the people in the spirit of supporting and loving the guerrillas, so that they aided the latter devotedly. She selected sturdy young men from among the hard core and sent them to the People's Revolutionary Army. Those who joined the guerrillas numbered a dozen from Taoquanli and over 100 from the Xiagangqu area. Her education of the people was so efficient that even the Chinese settlers in Taoquanli sent aid goods to the guerrillas, and the CC members collected enemy bullets from battlefields, and sent them to the guerrillas.

Soon after the battle at Pochonbo, Kim Jong Suk held a meeting of the heads of organizations under the Xiagangqu,

Changbai County, committee of the ARF, and formed the organization department, publicity department, education department, seniors' department, youth department and military department under the committee.

This restructuring enabled the Xiagangqu committee to guide its subordinate organizations positively and effectively. And the meeting held on the day of the Churinal festival in celebration of victory in the Pochonbo battle with the participation by the people not only in the area but also in Shisandaogou and Singalpha (Sinpha) in Korea proved an important occasion for expanding the ARF organizations and enlisting the people for the anti-Japanese struggle more dynamically.

In recollection of Kim Jong Suk in those days, Kim Il Sung said:

"Comrade Kim Jong Suk did a lot of work in the Taoquanli and Sinpha areas. It was at that time that I detected in her the gifts, talents and capability befitting a revolutionary. She had an extraordinary knack for influencing, stimulating and enlisting the masses."

The network of underground organizations in the Xiagangqu area was a springboard for extending organizations to wider areas of the homeland.

"THE SINPHA ROUTE"

Sinpha, facing Changbai, where the KPRA was active and a road junction connecting Hyesan, Jangjin and Kanggye, was a hub of strategic importance for the enemy. They guarded the town tightly to check the thrust of the KPRA into the homeland. The

enemy had built a fort in Sinpha, and kept scores of policemen, a border garrison and military police there.

In order to open up a route to Sinpha, Kim Jong Suk convened a meeting of the heads of underground organizations in the Xiagangqu area on Mt. Baoda on April 25, and advocated the task of vigorously pursuing the work in the Sinpha area. While dispatching underground organization members to several areas in the homeland, she studied the situation in Sinpha with the help of organization members and the villagers of Taoquanli.

The people of Taoquanli frequented Sinpha to sell grain or to buy cloth in the market there. They also purchased goods for the guerrillas, such as shoes, matches and salt, in the market.

Kim Jong Suk decided to visit the town in person.

To the underground organization members who were worrying about her safety, she said:

"We must be brave in going into the enemy's den no matter how intensive the enemy's surveillance and oppression is.... General Kim Il Sung has instructed that the underground workers should be bold in operating in the enemy-controlled areas."

One day in late May 1937, a market day in Sinpha, Kim Jong Suk left Taoquanli for Sinpha. Passing through Sanshuigou in Shisandaogou, she arrived at a ferry on the Amnok River. Accompanied by Kim Jae Su, who was attired like a peddler, she mingled with the people who were going to the market, and crossed the river. Passing the close inspection by the policemen in front of the gloomy fort near the ferry on the Korean side of the river, she proceeded to the market. In the market, women in tattered clothes were squatting in front of small heaps of barley, and beggars, scorned by the rich, were pestering strangers.

This miserable sight was a microcosm of Korea in agony. From the first step onto the soil of Korea she saw the harsh reality of the motherland and heard the voices of its people calling for succour.

Her journey to open up the Sinpha route was shadowed step by step by danger.

As she was entering the town from the ferry, a man with a shabby straw hat on his head followed her. In front of a restaurant, he took out a cigarette. Noticing this, she grew suspicious, because poor peasants could not afford cigarettes.

With this man tailing her, she roamed about the alleys. In the market, she saw a woman from Taoquanli carrying a baby on her back and a wicker basket on her head. Taking the woman's basket, and putting it on her own head, Kim Jong Suk slipped out of the market while the spy was busy looking elsewhere for her. This was one hair-raising episode in her activities in Sinpha.

From the market, she proceeded to the Sokjon Tailor's. Jang Hae U, a core element of the Working Committee of Communists in Samsu, was waiting for her there on prior notice. Kim Il Sung had told her about this man. Kim Il Sung was not strange to Jang as the latter had received guidance from his father, Kim Hyong Jik. Jang had been engaged in the independence movement, for involvement in which he had once been jailed.

Reading a personal letter from Kim Il Sung delivered by Kim Jong Suk, he was quite moved, and expressed his views without hesitation.

"You say General Kim Il Sung is Kim Song Ju, son of Mr. Kim Hyong Jik? I'll follow the General just as I followed Mr. Kim Hyong Jik."

Jang Hae U was not the type of man, who, proud of his age or revolutionary career, put on airs or behaved narrow-mindedly. He was ready to follow and support what was righteous without any conditions, and sacrifice himself for the cause. He had formed the Working Committee of Communists in Samsu to fight the Japanese imperialists, but was at a loss to know the correct method of struggle.

Kim Jong Suk first spoke highly of Jang's activities, and explained to him that the work of forming the organization of the ARF could not be said to have been accomplished merely by declaring its formation at a gathering of a few people and without making sufficient preparations. She said that it would be ideal for the members of the Working Committee of the Communists in Samsu to go deep among the people of all strata, educate them in Kim Il Sung's thought for the liberation of the country, train them in the practical struggle and, on this basis, form the ARF organizations and other anti-Japanese organizations. She asked him to watch the movements and disposition of the enemy troops, to assist the thrust of the KPRA into the homeland.

That day she also reconnoitered the arrangement of the enemy positions and movements in Sinpha town. When she returned to the ferry at sunset, the ferry was almost deserted. Most of the people who had come to the market had already crossed the river. A detective from the special political division of the Singalpha police station was inspecting the latecomers. If he thought anyone looked strange or suspicious, he took him to the station to have him and his belongings searched.

As it was her first trip to Sinpha, it was impossible for Kim Jong Suk to evade the detective's notice. At that moment, Kim Jae Su, who had been escorting her the whole day at a distance, immediately went ahead of her to the detective. In order to attract his attention, Kim Jae Su had intentionally crumpled up an empty sack and put it under his jacket, producing the effect of a suspicious bulge. When the detective challenged him, Kim Jae Su resisted, and was marched off to the station. Taking advantage of this diversion, Kim Jong Suk safely boarded the ferry.

After her visit, members of the Working Committee of the Communists in Samsu went deep among the people to educate

them in Kim Il Sung's idea for the restoration of the country, and collected information about the movements of the enemy.

Kim Jong Suk sent without delay the information she had gathered, along with aid goods, to Headquarters.

In June that year, the news of the Pochonbo battle spread as far as Taoquanli.

The flames that illuminated the night sky over Pochonbo were the harbinger of restoration of the country and the torch of revival that implanted hope for, and confidence in, the future in the minds of the oppressed Koreans. The whole country was seething with excitement, and the people were full of joy, saying, " The Japanese imperialists will be ruined before long," and "The day General Kim Il Sung recrosses the Amnok River will be the day Korea is liberated."

The Japanese aggressors shuddered at the great excitement of the people stimulated by the Pochonbo battle, saying, "We feel as if we have been struck hard on the back of the head," and "We feel the shame of watching the haystack we had been carefully building for a thousand days go up in flames in an instant."

When she heard the news about the battle, Kim Jong Suk envied her comrades-in-arms who fired the first gunshot of national restoration with homeland led by Kim Il Sung. Yearning for Kim Il Sung and her comrades-in-arms, she made a firm determination to carry out the heavy task of opening up the Sinpha route as soon as possible.

Panic-stricken at their defeat in Pochonbo, the Japanese imperialists ran amuck, throwing up a stricter cordon on the border between Korea and Manchuria. At the Sinpha ferry alone, the forts of the frontier guards were crawling with reinforcements. The guards at the forts examined everyone who got off the boat.

A week after the Pochonbo battle, Kim Jong Suk recrossed the river. The market and every corner of Sinpha town were crowded with people talking excitedly about the battle. She presided over a

secret meeting of the hard core of the revolutionary organizations in the Sinpha area in the backroom of the Sokjon Tailor's, and declared the formation of the Singalpha chapter of the ARF.

Later, thanks to her strenuous efforts, several branches were formed under the Singalpha chapter. June that year witnessed the emergence of a number of subordinate organizations of the ARF in the Sinpha area.

On June 22, Kim Jong Suk formed a Party circle, the first of its kind in the Sinpha area, involving Jang Hae U, Rim Won Sam and So Jae Il.

Under her guidance, the secret organization members in the Sinpha area brought home to the people Kim Il Sung's plan of national liberation, and rallied them around the ARF. As a result, the network of secret organizations spread across the area, although it was under strict enemy surveillance.

Kim Jong Suk used many places in the Sinpha area- the Kwangson Photo Studio, the Sokjon Tailor's, a noodle house near a well, the Sinpha Inn, a pottery shop and a mill. She met with the underground organization members there, and sent messages to them through these places. The aid goods for the guerrillas were also collected and stored in these places. The ARF branches in Ohamdok and Aan-ri, which had been formed in the presence of Kim Jong Suk, provided places for sending supply goods to the KPRA and dispatching revolutionary organization members to several parts of the homeland. Those to be dispatched to the Pujon, Jangjin, Sinhung and Hungnam areas were given tasks at the house of the head of the Aan-ri branch, and those to be dispatched to the Kapsan, Toksong, Pukchong and Tanchon areas were given their tasks at the Ohamdok Inn, where there was a special branch of the ARF involving the family members of the inn-keeper. In those days, she also expanded revolutionary organizations to the Hoin area in Samsu County.

By disguising herself, she skillfully used various secret liaison places in turn for the safety of the organizations.

During her activities in Taoquanli, she went to Sinpha scores of times, but the sharp-eyed policemen in Singalpha failed to recognize her. A considerable amount of supply goods was sent to the KPRA via Sinpha, and secret operatives and organization members went to every part of the homeland via Sinpha.

Kim Jong Suk gathered information about every movement of the enemy on the border, and promptly reported it to Headquarters, rendering a great contribution to the military operations of the KPRA.

After the Pochonbo battle, the Japanese aggressors held an emergency meeting at the headquarters of the government-general of Korea, drew up a large-scale "punitive" operations plan, and dispatched the Hamhung 74th Regiment of the 19th Division stationed in Korea to Hyesan.

As soon as Kim Jong Suk got this information, she relayed it to Headquarters.

On receiving the information, Kim Il Sung assigned the revolutionary organizations in the border areas and the homeland the task of watching the movements of the enemy troops concentrated in Hyesan.

Kim Jong Suk motivated all the organizations in the Sinpha area to execute this task. In order to frustrate the enemy's "punitive" operations, she had to find out where and when the enemy troops would cross the river. Every day, a unit of the enemy troops crossed the Amnok River at Hyesan. Still, the organization members and people motivated by Kim Jong Suk discovered that the enemy troops that had crossed the river in the daytime stealthily returned to Hyesan at night. It was clear that the enemy crossed the river at Hyesan only to deceive and divert the attention of the KPRA. Now it was imperative to learn the exact site and date of their river-crossing and their strength. Eventually,

she found out that the enemy was planning to move troops from Hyesan to Sinpha, to cross the Amnok River there, the trucks to be mobilized would number 70, the troops would be 1,500 strong and the crossing date would be June 27 and 28.

She sent this information without delay to Headquarters.

The battle of Jiansanfeng, fought on June 30, two days after the enemy troops crossed the Amnok River, ended in a victory for the KPRA. The enemy, who had boasted that they would "annihilate" the KPRA, were routed; only 200 of them survived. After this battle the story about "pumpkin head" (heads of the Japanese ... Tr.) dead began to spread among the people.

The underground revolutionary organizations led by Kim Jong Suk thus made a great contribution to the KPRA's victory in the battle of Jiansanfeng.

THE SPECIAL ENVOY

In early July 1937, a messenger from Headquarters came to convey to Kim Jong Suk a new task given by Kim Il Sung, requiring her to move immediately to the homeland to inform the revolutionary organizations and patriots active there of the clear target and appropriate strategy and tactics for their future struggle, to unite behind the ARF the revolutionaries and members of all the anti-Japanese organizations active in a dispersed way, and to push ahead with the preparations for the founding of the Party.

The task required her to go to the Phungsan area, in particular to send Chondoists under the influence of the relevant revolutionary organizations to the Chondoists Conference to be held in Seoul, in order to bring revolutionary influence to bear on the Chondoists throughout the country. Her duties also included

meeting Ri Ju Yon, Ri Young and Ri Yong, about whom the homeland revolutionary organizations had reported. It was an important task aimed at extending the anti-Japanese national united front movement and the preparations for the founding of the Party to the homeland, and building a revolutionary bulwark on the east coast of the homeland.

Working with strange Chondoists in the Phungsan area and also with unfamiliar communists and anti-Japanese patriots active in various places of the homeland was very tough job that required prudence.

Chondoism was founded in 1860 by Choe Je U under the slogan, "Innaechon" (Man and God are one) and "Pogukanmin" (Defending the country and providing welfare for the people), and developed by second leader Choe Si Hyong and third leader Son Pyong Hui into a national religious organization with three million followers. This religious organization was involved in the Kabo Peasant War[17], the Righteous Volunteers struggle[18] and the March First Popular Uprising[19], under the banner of "Driving out the Westerners and the Japanese" and "Defending the country and providing welfare for the people." However, the upper strata of Chondoism turned into reformists later. Some of them, Choe Rin, for example, turned pro-Japanese after serving prison terms. But the majority of the followers of this faith formed various organizations to resist the Japanese.

Proceeding from his understanding of this situation, Kim Il Sung, following the founding of the ARF, elaborated a plan of uniting all of the three million followers of Chondoism behind ARF organizations, and discussed his plan with Tojong Pak In Jin (Tojong is a title of a local leader of the Chondoist religion) for three days at the secret camp on Saja Hill in the winter of 1936.

During the meeting, Tojong Pak In Jin expressed his full support for Kim Il Sung's idea of national liberation, declared his determination to enlist the one million members of the Young

Chondoist Party in the sacred war for Korea's liberation, and promised that he would keep in close contact with Kim Il Sung.

Later, Tojong Pak went to Seoul, where the Chondoists General Conference was to be held, to negotiate with Choe Rin and the upper echelons of the central body of Chondoism.

Pak urged the followers of the Chondoist faith to fight, united behind the ARF. Yet Choe Rin opposed him, advocating reformism and a pro-Japanese policy.

Enraged, Pak broke with Choe Rin, and returned to Phungsan. He stopped sending annual ritual rice to Seoul, and recalled his permanent representative at the headquarters of the Young Chondoist Party in Seoul.

As a result, the ARF movement among the Chondoists reached a stage of being confined to the Ryongbuk area, where Pak was working as Tojong, a situation far removed from Kim Il Sung's idea of rallying all of the three million followers of Chondoism around ARF organizations.

In the meantime, Ri Ju Yon, with whom Kim Jong Suk was supposed to work, had once been involved in the work of the Singan Association[20], an anti-Japanese patriotic group with subordinate organizations throughout the country, and had served prison terms for involvement in the peasant uprising in Tanchon.

Ri Yong, a son of patriotic martyr Ri Jun, who disemboweled himself at the International Peace Conference held in The Hague (1907), upon the news of his father's death, went over to China with a determination to carry forward his father's patriotic mission, and became the director of the "Kanmin Association" the association of Koreans in Jilin Province. He studied at a military academy in Zhejiang Province and, following the October Socialist Revolution, went to the Far East of Russia to get involved in the Korean Socialist Party. His career was complicated. He once organized the "Koryo Volunteers Army" to fight, together with the Soviet Red Army, against the Whites and

Japanese interventionists, and witnessed such fratricidal factional strife as the "Heihe incident", which convulsed him with a feeling of national disgrace. In the autumn of 1931 he went to eastern Manchuria, only to be arrested by the Japanese police and, around this period of time, put under house arrest in his native place, Pukchong.

Ri Young's career was similar to Ri Yong's. Ri Young took part in the March First Uprising, and later involved himself in the Seoul Youth Association (Seoul faction) to engage in youth work, and also in the work of the Korean Communist Party founded in 1925, before being arrested and serving four years in Sodaemun prison, Seoul. After his release, he plunged himself into a movement for the resurrection of communist party or labour union and peasant union movements, and was again put behind bars.

Kim Jong Suk, in the company of the Headquarters messengers Kim Pong Sok and Pak Jong Suk, went to Phungsan, where they were guided by Ri Chang Son, a soldier of the 4th Company of the 7th Regiment and a former top disciple of Pak In Jin.

Kim Jong Suk was introduced by Ri Chang Son to Won Chung Hui, head of the Phungsan County Chapter of Chondoism[21]. On the same day, Won Chung Hui called a meeting of the Chondoists who had participated in the Chondoists General Conference in December the previous year. The meeting began with the recital of a 24-word formula before a bowl of clean water, the formula Tojong Pak In Jin had devised upon his return home from Seoul. At the meeting of followers of Chondoism held at Wangjiadong in Shiqidaogou, Changbai County, on his return home, Tojong Pak In Jin designated that year as the beginning of a new era for Chondoism, and announced a new formula he had revised accordingly. The formula reads as follows: "When the bright sun and stars shine, welfare will reside in the country and the people; when all the people are united in mind and body under the rays of the sun and the stars, Korea's liberation will be

achieved and a paradise set up." After the meeting, Won Chung Hui introduced Kim Jong Suk to the attendees as a special envoy from Kim Il Sung.

After greeting them all and conveying the advice of Kim Il Sung that it would be reasonable to dispatch another delegation to the celebration events to be organized that year by the central body of Chondoism, Kim Jong Suk said, "Korea is still in the position of being a colonial slave just because the entire nation of 20 million people has failed to fight the Japanese, all united in mind and body; General Kim Il Sung formed the ARF with a view to uniting all the Korean people who hated the Japanese, irrespective of their position."

She continued, "Dispatching a delegation to Seoul is by no means aimed at winning over such a pro-Japanese element as Choe Rin. We must distinguish Choe Rin and his group from those under his influence. Such a wicked element as Choe Rin should be isolated by all means, but the majority of the Chondoist advocates who have been deceived by Choe Rin should be won over through education. The General intends to defeat the Japanese imperialists by the united efforts of the entire Korean people, including Chondoists, that is, by uniting the entire nation in mind and body".

Upon hearing this, the attendees unanimously said that the far-seeing General Kim Il Sung was a genuine saviour of Korea. The meeting discussed and decided on the matter of dispatching a larger delegation to celebration events to be held in Seoul and the matter of sending back their former representative to the headquarters of the Young Chondoist Party so that he could transmit Kim Il Sung's line on the anti-Japanese national united front to the Chondoist chapters in Seoul and in other areas, and the matter of informing all Chondoist chapters in South Phyongan Province, North Hamgyong Province, Hwanghae Province and

other areas throughout the country of the standpoint of the Phungsan chapter for the purpose of taking joint action with them during the celebration events.

Kim Jong Suk's first duty as a special envoy of Kim Il Sung was carried out, thus.

Ri Ju Yon, Ri Yong and Ri Young, whom she was supposed to meet, were always on the "blacklist" of the Japanese police.

This notwithstanding, Kim Jong Suk threw the enemy's surveillance into confusion by employing methods appropriate to the occasion, met these operatives one by one, and conveyed to them Kim Il Sung's message to the fighters active in the homeland, thus leading them on the road to struggle.

Ri Ju Yon had ensconced himself in the Todok temple in Songpha-ri, Tanchon County, recuperating from a disease he had contracted in prison, when Kim Jong Suk called on him, saying she had come on behalf of Kim Il Sung. Ri, bed-ridden, immediately sat up, to everyone's surprise.

Holding his hands in hers, she said that General Kim Il Sung was always thinking of the fighters active in the homeland, and that he sent her to them to discuss with them the orientation of their future activities and necessary measures.

She explained to him Kim Il Sung's clarification of the character of the Korean revolution, his line on the anti-Japanese national united front, his idea of achieving national liberation by the united efforts of the Korean people themselves, the subject discussed at the Nanhutou Conference, and his policy of rapidly expanding Party organizations and establishing a regular system of guidance to revolutionary organizations in the homeland.

Ri said that he could now see the light at the end of the tunnel, as the question he had been grappling with since his sojourn in prison had been resolved.

In August the same year, Kim Jong Suk again journeyed to the homeland, and met Ri at his relative's house in Soku-ri, Tanchon County, to assign him a task of working in Pyongyang.

Later, Ri Ju Yon moved to Pyongyang, and started expanding revolutionary organizations in the Pyongyang Rubber Factory, Pyongyang Cornstarch Factory and other factories, and contacted the communists active in Nampho and Kangso. After Korea's liberation, he worked as the director of the general affairs department at the Provisional People's Committee in North Korea and later as a vice-premier of the DPRK.

His meeting with Kim Jong Suk was a significant event that marked a new chapter in his life.

Kim Jong Suk left Tanchon for Chaho via Riwon. In order to escape the enemy's strict surveillance, she made an appointment with Ri Yong at the "Jokpyokgang" resort, frequented by holiday makers and other strangers. Ri Yong had been staying at the house of a member of an anti-Japanese association he had organized, before being informed of the appointment.

When they met, Ri Yong was tentatively cautious and on the alert, and only when Kim Jong Suk said that she had come from Mt. Paektu on Kim Il Sung's instructions did he relax and exclaim, "How did General Kim Il Sung, Chairman of the Association for the Restoration of the Fatherland, the one and only leader of Korea and the brilliant commander of the anti-Japanese struggle, come to know of such an ordinary person as I am and dispatch a senior operative to this enemy-controlled area?"

Kim Jong Suk told him that no one doubted that Ri would devote his life and soul to the struggle for national liberation by living up to the noble patriotic idea of his father Ri Jun, and explained to him the Inaugural Declaration and the Ten-point Programme of the ARF.

Deeply impressed by General Kim Il Sung's idea on national liberation, Ri Yong asked her to convey to the General his full

determination to fight heart and soul for the sacred cause of Korea's liberation true to the idea of patriotism, working as a solider of Kim Il Sung.

Later, when she came to the homeland again, Kim Jong Suk met Ri on several occasions, and told him that Kim Il Sung had spoken highly of his struggle.

Ri Yong continued to follow a revolutionary road in spite of Japanese oppression, and after Korea's liberation worked as the first minister of city management in Korea.

On the day of their first meeting, Kim Jong Suk left for Pukchong by a horse-drawn cart Ri Yong had obtained for her trip.

At Chonghung-ri, Pukchong County, she met the head of the ARF organization in Pukchong to get acquainted with the state of the enemy's disposition and the work done by the organization, and asked in detail about the recent ideological standpoint of Ri Young, one of early communist campaigners.

Upon hearing of her intention to meet Ri Young, the head of the ARF organization shook his head dubiously, and said that such a meeting would be very dangerous. His anxiety was understandable, as a meeting with a person on the enemy's "blacklist" was really risky.

Burning with the intention to carry out the assignment given to her by Kim Il Sung, Kim Jong Suk made a daring plan to meet Ri Young in broad daylight at a pine grove in Chonghung-ri where many people were to gather.

As soon as he was told Kim Jong Suk's identity a Kim Il Sung's operative, Ri took her hands and exclaimed, almost in tears: "Why so late?"

Upon hearing of Kim Il Sung's message to the anti-Japanese activists in the homeland, Ri said that he had nothing to be afraid of, and expressed his full determination to devote himself wholeheartedly to anything the General would require him to do.

Later, as advised by Kim Jong Suk, Ri Young moved to Seoul, where he met former anti-Japanese campaigners, and explained the revolutionary line put forward by Kim Il Sung. There, he formed such organizations as the "Steel Group" and "Mountain Corps". He also extended the network of his organizations from Seoul to Kangwon, and North Kyongsang and South Phyongan provinces.

Following the liberation of Korea, Ri worked devotedly to support Kim Il Sung's line on building a new society, and, after the founding of the DPRK, worked in a responsible position at the Supreme People's Assembly.

The long, rugged road Kim Jong Suk walked along as a special envoy of General Kim Il Sung was not only meaningful in the sense of leading the fighters active in the homeland to the struggle in support of Kim Il Sung but also because it was a significant way in which she trained hardcore fighters that would extend the network of ARF organizations to Seoul and even to Tokyo, capital of Japan.

On her way back to Phungsan, Kim Jong Suk dropped in at the house of Ju Pyong Pho at Yangji Village, Munjo-ri. She gave him revolutionary education and visited a secret camp in Phungsan to guide the work of small units and teams. During her stay in the Honggun area, she got a worker at a cable railway to be a member of a revolutionary organization. The man had been guided by Ri Chang Son along the revolutionary road. On her way back to her unit, she heard the news of the outbreak of the Sino-Japanese War. At Phabal-ri she met Ri In Mo, who was working at a dam construction site in Hwangsuwon, and explained to him the future of the revolutionary struggle.

When he came to know a few days after she had left that she was an operative of the KPRA dispatched by Kim Il Sung, Ri In Mo was said to have been angry at Chang Son, asking why he had not told him of her true identity, and saying that had he known of

her identity he would have followed her to enlist in the revolutionary army.

A LETTER FROM PRISON

Following their provocation of the Sino-Japanese War, the Japanese imperialists were committed to setting up "internment" villages, in an attempt to destroy the ties between the revolutionary army and the people.

To cope with the prevailing situation, Kim Il Sung summoned the political operatives and heads of underground revolutionary organizations active in various places of Changbai and Korea to the secret camp on Mt. Paektu.

Upon her arrival at the secret camp, together with the messengers of Headquarters, Kim Jong Suk reported to Commander Kim Il Sung of her work in Xiagangqu, Sinpha, Phungsan, Tanchon, Riwon and Pukchong.

Kim Il Sung expressed his satisfaction with her excellent accomplishment of duty as intended by Headquarters.

A meeting of the political operatives and heads of underground revolutionary organizations was held at the secret camp on Saja Hill. At the meeting, Kim Il Sung set tasks for the political operatives and underground revolutionary organizations.

Kim Il Sung tasked Kim Jong Suk with the undertaking of building a revolutionary bulwark in the homeland, with a firm foothold in Taoquanli and Sinpha, the areas she was already familiar with.

Kim Jong Suk went to Taoquanli, where she informed the hard-core members of the revolutionary organizations of Kim Il

Sung's speech at the Saja Hill meeting and adopted appropriate measures to deal with the enemy's white terror.

To counter the "internment" village policy, the revolutionary organizations infiltrated members into the enemy's ruling machinery and tightened their surveillance over the enemy's secret agents and stooges. Meanwhile, they also instructed their members to adhere to the principles in their underground work and heighten their vigilance. This resulted in the enemy's ruling machinery in Xiagangqu and Sinpha being thrown into confusion, and some others becoming little more than grassroots organs of the KPRA. Village head Jong Tong Chol formed "sworn brothers" relationships with the police chief, the chief customs officer and the subcounty head, and thereby got secrets out of them; one of his "sworn brothers" was a detective of the special political division dispatched from Sinpha. As far as Shisandaogou was concerned, at least two or three special members of the ARF organizations infiltrated into organs affiliated to the police station, and most of the village heads or ten-household chiefs were the members of revolutionary organizations.

In the Sinpha area there was a special ARF branch made up of hard-core ARF members Kim Jong Suk had selected on the basis of full knowledge of their backgrounds and had trained personally. Its members were disguised so well that neither the enemy nor the chief of the Singalpha ARF chapter Jang Hae U could detect them; Jang Hae U found out their true identities only after Korea's liberation.

Hair-trigger moments and desperate situations arose on several occasions in the process of underground activities.

In August 1937, Kim Jong Suk was arrested while conducting underground activities, due to the discovery by the "Jingan army" of rolls of paper purchased by members of the Taoquanli Women's Union for the printing shop of the KPRA.

One day in early August, Kim Jong Suk, going under the alias Om Ok Sun, was discussing with some members of the Women's Association about the transportation to the KPRA of aid goods, including the rolls of paper purchased by the association members at a market in Sinpha. At that time, the soldiers of the "Jingan army", who had been combing the nearby mountains in search of the KPRA, came down to the village, and began a house-to-house search. When they discovered rolls of paper in a barn, the company commander drew his pistol, and declared that the house the barn belonged to was a "communist house."

Pushing the pistol aside, Kim Jong Suk retorted matter-of-factly:

"What makes you think this is a communist house, sir?"

"These rolls of paper are evidence, aren't they?"

"They are for making the 'Residence', which you asked for."

"Then, why did you keep them in the barn?"

"Look here, sir. This village is under frequent attack by the communist army (KPRA). If they were left outside, the communists might steal them."

The company commander became enraged. He shouted: "Then, why are they hidden in this particular house? What about the village head?"

Kim Jong Suk said, "The village head said that my house was the safest, and asked me to keep them here."

Now the company commander barked at her:

"As you are so fearless and fluent, you must be a spy of the communist army. I'm taking you to the headquarters of our brigade for questioning."

Kim Jong Suk was put under arrest and escorted to Yaofangzi where the brigade headquarters of the "Jingan army" was located.

Fretting about his daily failure in the "punitive" action, the company commander reported that he had arrested a "communist

girl." The enemy put her to bestial torture to take confession out of her, but to no avail.

A soldier introduced himself as a "conscientious man" to her in fluent Korean, and said that he would help her get released if she admitted that she was an operative and told him about the organizational network. Otherwise, he threatened, she would certainly be subject to execution.

Kim Jong Suk, too, was well aware of the fact that they would not give up unless she admitted her true identity, that she would have to be ready for death and that she had to choose between death and jailbreak.

The place where she was incarcerated was a farmhouse in Yaofangzi. Only one soldier was standing guard in the courtyard. It would not have been difficult for her to escape, but she decided not to take this way out. The reason was that if she did, it would be tantamount to admitting that she was an operative of the revolutionary army, and the old man and woman of the house she had been staying in and the residents of Taoquanli who had vouched for her would be subject to reprisals. Then, the revolutionary organizations would be exposed to the enemy's white terror, and Sinpha route, a place to which Kim Il Sung was attaching great importance, would be thrown into jeopardy. Considering the organization more valuable than her own life and preparing herself for death, she wrote a letter to the organization, which read as follows:

"Do not be alarmed. I will be killed, but the organization must continue its existence. I enclose two yuan, my only assets. Please use this money for the organization's funds."

The letter was handed over by the old woman, in whose house she was detained, to the underground organization in Taoquanli.

Upon their receipt of the unexpected letter, the members of the organization in Taoquanli, anxious about her safety, shed tears and made up their minds to rescue her at the risk of their lives.

Members of the organization formed a delegation, which visited the headquarters of the "Jingan army" unit, treating the officers with food and filing a strong protest against the unwarranted arrest of a guiltless, innocent citizen, demanding her immediate release, at the same time.

The headquarters of the "Jingan army" unit handed Kim Jong Suk over to the police station in Shisidaogou.

The organization thereupon entrusted Jong Tong Chol, the village head, with the task of negotiating with the chief of the police station, with whom he was a "sworn brother", for her release. Jong Tong Chol told him: "Om Ok Sun is a political worker dispatched by General Kim Il Sung. So you must make efforts to release her. First of all, you have only to transfer her from Shisidaogou to Shisandaogou, which is also under your jurisdiction."

As a result, Kim Jong Suk was paraded through Taoquanli under guard with her hands tied.

In later days, Jong Tong Chol recollected the event as follows:

"It was about 2 p.m., when Kim Jong Suk, with her arms tied and escorted by vigilant police, walked along the main street of Taoquanli, her whole body bearing traces of horrible torture and her white jacket and black skirt torn here and there.

"All the villagers stood along the road and saw her striding ahead...

"She was striding bound and barefoot at police gunpoint, her head held upright proudly, her eyes full of strong will and wisdom all the time, shining with confidence and conviction. ...

"Stopping before the crowd along the road, she bowed to the villagers. Men and women, young and old, all the villagers wept. ... I could hardly contain my innermost thought: 'General Kim Il Sung has brought up such a heroic person.'

Not only Jong Tong Chol but also all the residents of Taoquanli saw her off in tears, thinking, "A revolutionary is such a person. One must live like her."

An old woman rushed out into the road, carrying a pair of straw sandals, and put them on Kim Jong Suk's bleeding feet. She then severely reprimanded the police escort:

"You villains! What crime did our Ok Sun commit to be arrested? I heard that you arrested her for being a communist. Well, if Ok Sun is a communist, I, too, will become a communist."

Jong Tong Chol followed Kim Jong Suk, and conducted negotiations with the chief of the police station in Shisandaogou for her release. The station chief promised that he would recognize her as a "good citizen" and release her, if Jong prepared a warranty for her as a good citizen, signed by 500 people. He was demanding this document in order to provide a cover for shirking his responsibility. Although he had promised this as a concession to his "sworn brother" Jong Tong Chol, the station chief thought the task impossible.

In fact, the demand was a tall order, and almost as impossible as crying for the moon, as Taoquanli comprised no more than 200 households. Moreover, the local people would be loath to put their signatures to a document supporting a "subversive element."

Nevertheless, Jong Tong Chol got 500 people to sign the warranty overnight, and put it on the police chief's desk. The police chief's eyes almost popped out with astonishment.

Recollecting this event in later days, Kim Il Sung said as follows:

"How could she enjoy such trust from the people? Because she had worked with her full devotion. Whatever she did, she threw herself into it heart and soul, unafraid of death. And this was why she could survive any danger. She was afire with love for the people. She thought her sacrifice for others was not in the least

wasteful. It was her nature to go through even fire and water if it was for the sake of her comrades."

After perusing the written warranty for a long while, the police chief released Kim Jong Suk.

Upon the news of her release, all the villagers in Taoquanli turned out and surrounded her, with exclamations of joy. In order to treat the wounds inflicted upon her by horrible torture, an old man brought a jug of wild honey he had treasured for years, while a woman brought cakes made of valuable glutinous rice which she had saved for a celebration party. The members of the underground organization entreated her to take a rest. Saying, however, that she had no right to rest before fulfilling the revolutionary duty assigned to her by General Kim Il Sung, she met the members of the underground revolutionary organization to get familiar with their activities and studied the new information obtained about the enemy's movements and disposition.

When she met a messenger from Headquarters at a secret rendezvous at the foot of Mt. Baotai, Kim Jong Suk inquired after Kim Il Sung and asked the messenger for instructions from Headquarters.

Prior to her arrest, Kim Il Sung was said to have entrusted her with the task of going to the homeland to inform the small units, political operatives and revolutionary organizations of the new policy adopted at the secret camps on Mt. Paektu and Saja Hill, as well as the intentions of Headquarters, and guide their activities, while grasping the actual state of affairs inside the homeland at the same time. This task required her to cover on foot a wide area ranging from Rangnim and Pujon to Tanchon and Hochon along the east coast.

Kim Jong Suk, however, was in poor health owing to the after-effects of the torture to which she had been subjected. The messenger said that he would report to Headquarters about the

condition of her health, and suggested that she recuperate first or that someone else be sent in her place.

But Kim Jong Suk rejected his suggestion, saying that it was unworthy of a genuine revolutionary fighter, who must work heart and soul for Commander Kim Il Sung, to delay or entrust to other comrades the task assigned to him or her by the Commander merely for health reasons.

One day in early August, she made a journey covering hundreds of miles in the face of the enemy's tight surveillance, to embark on political work in the homeland.

Arriving at Insan-ri, Rangnim County, Jagang Province, via Sinpha, she met the political operatives and heads of underground organizations there, gave them directions concerning their work, and proceeded with her journey over Jicho Pass in the Ryonhwa Mountains to the secret base on Pujon Pass on Mt. Okryon. Meeting the small unit members active there, she told them to build up the base true to the Commander's intention of extending the Paektusan Base to the Rangnim Mountains and the area of Pujon Pass. In her meeting with the political operatives and heads of revolutionary organizations there, she instructed them to expand the network of ARF organizations, and form paramilitary corps with young people in the vicinity of the base.

Kim Jong Suk channeled great efforts into the work of building up the secret base in the Sinhung area. This work was extremely significant in expanding Party and ARF organizations and various other anti-Japanese mass organizations in Hamhung, Hungnam and other areas on the east coast where Japanese munitions industries were concentrated, and, particularly, in transforming labour unions and peasant unions along revolutionary lines, and thoroughly preparing patriotic-minded people politically and ideologically.

When she reached the Sinhung area she first looked round the existing secret camps and then discussed the location of secret

camps to be set up in the future. That evening, she called a meeting of the members of the small units and teams of the KPRA active in the area, and explained to them the importance of the secret base in the Sinhung area in materializing Commander Kim Il Sung's idea of taking control of the Pujonryong Mountains in order to extend and develop the armed struggle deep into the homeland.

She, then, went to the secret camp on Mt. Kodae in Jangjin County, where she met the members of the small unit active there, and visited a coal miners' village in Sinhung. She met many heads of organizations, coal miners and their families there, and kindled their revolutionary enthusiasm. In her meeting with the heads of revolutionary organizations in the Hungnam and Sinhung areas, she explained General Kim Il Sung's idea of an anti-Japanese national united front.

As a result, working-class organizations were expanded in the areas of Sinhung, Hungnam and Hamhung, and the work of building up the secret base in the Sinhung area was promoted successfully.

Winding up her mission in the Sinhung area, Kim Jong Suk resumed her journey to the east coast.

On her way, she met a political operative in Hongwon to whom she explained the need to transform the peasant unions into subordinate organizations of the ARF, and proceeded to the secret camp on Huchi Pass via Pukchong, Riwon and Tanchon.

Upon her return from Huchi Pass through Phungsan and Samsu to Taoquanli in mid-September, she submitted a detailed report of her political work in the homeland to Kim Il Sung through the messenger from Headquarters.

Kim Il Sung expressed satisfaction at her activities, and spoke highly of her service.

This journey of about 400 kilometres taken by Kim Jong Suk became a stepping stone across which Kim Il Sung thrust into the Sinhung area in September that year.

In October the same year, Kim Jong Suk was ordered by Headquarters to return to the unit. The day she took her leave of Taoquanli, many villagers accompanied her to say farewell. As she crossed Mt. Baotai and came near to a forest, the Women's Association members ran after her, shouting, "Wherever you go... please let us know your whereabouts!"

Kim Jong Suk turned back and waved at them, beaming and saying, "When you hear gunshots somewhere around Mt. Paektu, please understand that Jong Suk too is fighting under the command of General Kim Il Sung!"

In mid-October she arrived at the secret camp somewhere near Fuhoushui where Kim Il Sung was staying, and changed into a new uniform before presenting herself before the General.

Kim Il Sung received her at the gate of the log cabin used by Headquarters, saying, "How are you? Well done. ... I was confident that you would discharge your mission with credit and return safely."

He paid high tribute to her for her contribution to victories in the battles of Pochonbo, Jiansanfeng and elsewhere, in which she sent valuable information about the enemy's movements and dispositions, as well as large quantities of aid goods. He also praised her for her efforts to build the network of ARF organizations in the border area along the Amnok River and along the areas in the east coast of the homeland, a network that would prove its worth in future military and political activities.

5. IN THE TEETH OF GRIM TRIALS

LET NOT THE DEATHS OF COMRADES-IN-ARMS BE IN VAIN

By the time Kim Jong Suk returned to the unit after completing her mission of underground activities, the prevailing situation was complicated and grave.

Following their provocation of full-scale armed aggression on the Chinese mainland on July 7, 1937, the Japanese imperialists stepped up their fascist suppression of the Korean people and "punitive" offensive against the KPRA, on the pretext of ensuring "security in the rear."

At successive meetings, including the meeting of the commanding personnel of the main-force unit of the KPRA held

at the secret camp on Mt. Paektu in July 1937, and in the Appeal to All Korean Compatriots published in September the same year, Kim Il Sung put forward a policy of intensifying the anti-Japanese armed struggle and bringing about a new upsurge in the Korean revolution as a whole, to meet the rapidly-changing situation. He said that, before anything else, the KPRA units should wage brisk armed struggle in the border areas and in the homeland, launch a hard strike at the enemy from the rear, and accelerate the preparations for an all-people resistance throughout the country.

The winter operations in 1937 and the spring offensive in 1938 were an important part of implementing this strategic and tactical policy. Kim Il Sung dispatched to various places many small units whose mission it was to build up underground revolutionary organizations and secure clothing and food necessary for the launching of new operations.

Kim Jong Suk, too, was assigned a task a few days after her return. The destination of her new mission was the Jiazaishui village, where she was to take quick steps to protect the revolutionary organizations from the crackdown prompted by the "Hyesan incident," and direct the work of the small unit that had been dispatched there to obtain clothing and food.

When she arrived at the Jiazaishui village, Kim Jong Suk repeatedly spoke highly of the efforts made by the members of the revolutionary organizations there to protect their organizations and send a large amount of supply goods to the guerrilla army, in the teeth of the enemy's suppression. And she said, "It is extremely important to protect revolutionary organizations as the enemy's white terror is gaining momentum, ... but what you should know is that revolutionary organizations are formed to wage struggle, not to protect themselves, and they will only grow stronger in the crucible of struggle."

While showing great concern for making the revolutionary organizations more militant and active, she led the small unit to deal all out with the work of obtaining clothing and food.

With her mission in Jiazaishui discharged successfully, she returned to the unit, and set to making winter uniforms, together with the members of the sewing unit. Their hard work enabled the unit to lay in uniforms, knapsacks, cartridge belts, leggings and all the other items needed for winter operations, in a short time.

Kim Jong Suk, however, had to part from the unit again, as Kim Il Sung, prior to his expedition towards Mengjiang in command of the main-force unit, had given her the task of remaining in Changbai, in charge of the sewing unit, giving guidance to the organizations in the homeland and Changbai, and making preparations for the unit's spring operations the following year.

All those who were to remain in Changbai felt regretful, as their unit would not return for a long time and the current expedition might continue till the following spring.

Kim Jong Suk was more impatient than anybody else to accompany Kim Il Sung, as she had returned to the unit only recently. Her constant desire during her underground work in the enemy-held areas was to return to her unit and fight under the command of Kim Il Sung. When a commanding officer told her of his intention to ask Kim Il Sung to allow her, who had been separated from the unit for a long time, to take part in the expedition, Kim Jong Suk dissuaded him from making such a suggestion. For she could not compromise with her own determination to find her hope and wish, joy and pleasure solely in her endeavour to materialize Kim Il Sung's idea and intention better.

Prior to departure of the unit, she put into the knapsack of Kim Il Sung's orderly a pair of gloves she had made out of fur jacket given her by the members of the underground

organizations in Jiazaishui. She asked the orderly to give the gloves to the Commander when it became cold.

That winter, Changbai suffered falls of snow so heavy that the whole of the secret camp was frequently buried overnight, and in the morning one had to dig a tunnel to get out of the cabin.

The secret camp at Ganbahezi, where the sewing unit was staying, comprised two log cabins, two kilometres away from one another. One cabin was occupied by Kim Jong Suk and some of her fellow guerrillas, and the other one was occupied by the rest, including Pak Su Hwan. The camp was arranged with the utmost secrecy. Paying attention to ensuring secrecy of the camp, Kim Jong Suk carried out her duty of guiding the ARF organizations in the homeland and Changbai.

The new year of 1938 brought a great misfortune to the secret camp.

Ma Tong Hui and Jang Jung Ryol, who had been dispatched by Headquarters to get familiar with the actual state of damage to the revolutionary organizations due to the "Hyesan incident" and to take appropriate measures, were arrested, as a result of information supplied by Kim Thae Son to the police. Ma Tong Hui went to the length of biting off his own tongue to keep the secrets of the organizations, whereas Jang Jung Ryol, during torture, divulged the location of the hideout in Shijiudaogou. Ji Thae Hwan and Jo Kae Gu were arrested at the hideout. Ji's lips were sealed, but Jo revealed the existence of the secret camp at Ganbahezi.

One day in January 1938, the enemy's "punitive" troops, guided by the turncoat, pounced upon the secret camp.

By the time Pak Su Hwan and other women guerrillas detected the enemy, the camp was already under siege. Rifle fire was exchanged.

Kim Jong Suk heard the shots from her cabin when the routine military and political study session was almost over. No sooner

had she heard them than she ordered the guerrillas to prepare for battle, and rushed toward the other cabin. Struggling through waist-deep snow and over fallen trees, she arrived at the scene of the fighting when silence already reigned over the place, and only smoke and flames were coiling up from the log cabin. Footprints of the "punitive" troops were all around the cabin.

Kim Jong Suk found six of her comrades-in-arms lying hand in hand beneath a tree. She rushed to them and held them up one by one, calling their names. Tears rolled down her face.

Empty cartridge shells lay here and there, showing how her comrades had fought bravely until they ran out of ammunition. Pak Su Hwan, who had killed a Japanese policeman with a washing club, wrested a rifle from him and enlisted in the guerrilla army, crackshot Ho Sun Hui, Kim Yong Gum who had enlisted following her husband Ma Tong Hui, and Kim Sang Guk..., they were all her valuable comrades-in-arms who, together with her, had forged ahead through rugged mountains and ridges, raging storms, and seas of fire in bloody battles, inspired by their firm pledge to wholeheartedly uphold General Kim Il Sung, the sun of the nation, and become his loyal women soldiers. They had pledged that they would either live or die together; yet, they were shot and lying in an icy wasteland, never to see the day of Korea's liberation, which had been their lifelong desire.

Kim Jong Suk saw words on the tree, written in blood: "Long live the Korean revolution," which her comrades-in-arms had written in the last moments of their lives.

The letters, written by each person, were the last will and expression of conviction on the part of her comrades-in-arms who had fallen in action on the road of revolution.

Repressing her indignation and sorrow, Kim Jong Suk said to her fellow guerrillas that the revolutionary spirit of the comrades-in-arms, though their heartbeats had stopped, would remain

forever in the minds of their living comrades, along with those words written in blood, and continued:

"Comrades, let us turn our sorrow into hatred for the invaders, and work with redoubled energy and courage to defeat the Japanese imperialists, so as to hasten the date of Korea's liberation, the earnest desire of our fallen comrades. Let not the deaths of our comrades-in-arms be in vain!"

Together with her fellow guerrillas, Kim Jong Suk cleared the snow-covered ground in a sunny place at the foot of a mountain, coated the ground with dead leaves and laid the six fallen comrades-in-arms on them. They covered the faces of the corpses with their jackets.

That night, the small unit led by Kim Jong Suk evacuated the secret camp at Ganbahezi, as it was too dangerous to remain there.

The unit trekked on, the guerrillas obliterating their footprints as they went, and in two days reached the secret camp at Fuhoushui where the 2nd Company of the 7 th Regiment was staying. At this camp, Kim Jong Suk devoted herself to military and political training, keeping her sorrow at the loss of her valuable comrades deep inside her heart in anticipation of revenge. She helped all the guerrillas to concentrate on improving their marksmanship. She earnestly looked forward to the spring, when Kim Il Sung would come to Changbai in command of the main-force unit.

One day in early April, a messenger from Headquarters arrived at the Fuhoushui secret camp with the news that Kim Il Sung had come to Changbai, news Kim Jong Suk had long awaited.

Together with the other members of her small unit, Kim Jong Suk rushed to greet Kim Il Sung, and reported to him the deaths of the six comrades-in-arms. Unable to repress his feelings on hearing the heart-rending report, Kim Il Sung riveted his eyes on a mountain range far ahead for a long while, before informing Kim Jong Suk of the news that Kim Hwak Sil had fallen on the way to Changbai.

Kim Hwak Sil had been known to Kim Jong Suk since their days in Yanji. Together, they had carried out difficult tasks in the enemy-held areas over come the trials in Chechangzi. During the battle at Laoling they fought hand-to-hand there, and, during the Battle of Fusong County Town, had fought bravely to defend a col. Kim Hwak Sil's death was quite a shock to Kim Jong Suk. The previous winter had really been a period of heart-rending losses.

The following day, Kim Il Sung ordered a live-fire exercise-an occasion when all the soldiers gave their fallen comrades a pledge of revenge, an occasion when they threw down the gauntlet to the enemy to avenge their comrades a thousand fold.

Targets were set up 100 metres and 150 metres away. Some were wooden targets, while others were made of snow to look like "punitive" troops.

Kim Jong Suk placed herself in the firing position, and pulled the trigger time and again, each shot hitting its target, shattering to pieces the glass set into the hearts or eyes of targets made to look like enemy soldiers.

During the spring offensive, she displayed her audacity and good marksmanship, doing great damage to the enemy.

The battle of Shierdaogou and a second attack on the walled town of Liudaogou on the night of April 26 were quite interesting exterminatory battles. The walled town of Liudaogou was extensive and the emplacements in the vicinity of the police station were lit by blazing bulbs hanging outside, making a night offensive difficult. When the battle started, Han Chang Bong, who had enlisted at Taoquanli, shot the light bulbs cut one by one in a minute. The attack team, to which Kim Jong Suk belonged, immediately seized the main emplacement and its machine guns. The enemy began to throw away their weapons and surrender, though some in other emplacements still persisted in their resistance.

Each time a flash of flame spouted from an enemy's rifle, Kim Jong Suk shot back with deadly aim. That day, the unit destroyed the enemy's emplacements, barracks and police station.

When the battle was over, the guerrillas were overjoyed. They exulted, "Tonight we have killed enough enemy troops to assuage our grief over the loss of our comrades."

Kim Jong Suk shook her head in disagreement, saying, "No, not enough yet."

To her, each of the fallen comrades-in-arms was so valuable as to be unable to be traded for a hundred Japs.

Another opportunity for revenge presented itself the following day. Kim Il Sung elaborated a plan for annihilating at Shuangshanzi the enemy troops that were on the heels of the KPRA, eager to make up for their defeat at Liudaogou.

The mountain at the back of Shuangshanzi consists of four hills.

Kim Jong Suk was on the height in the middle, where Headquarters was situated. The battle started at dawn and continued until evening. At first, about 100 mounted enemy soldiers charged up the height. The distance between the KPRA and the enemy shrank to 500 metres, then 400 metres. ...

At the order of Kim Il Sung, Kim Jong Suk, who had been aiming at the trooper in the lead, pulled the trigger, and the man fell.

When the cavalry attack failed, foot soldiers started attacking under the cover of machine-gun fire. This attack, however, was also routed. In the afternoon, about 1,000 of the enemy began attacking again. About 5 p.m. a freak rainstorm started. Taking advantage of this storm, those of the enemy remaining alive made a life-or-death charge. The fierce battle ended when dusk fell. The enemy ran away leaving large numbers of dead behind.

In the following battles, including those at Jiajiaying and Xintaizi, Kim Jong Suk fought bravely. At the meeting of

reviewing the spring offensive, Kim Il Sung presented her with a gold ring as a token of commendation of her distinguished services.

TO MEET AGAIN THE FIGHTERS IN THE HOMELAND

In the spring of 1938, Kim Jong Suk involved herself in underground work in the homeland again, in support of Kim Il Sung's idea.

In this period, the revolutionary organizations in Hyesan, Korea, and Changbai were subjected to grim trials owing to the "Hyesan incident". Using their arrest of an operative at a Paegam-Musan railway construction site, the Japanese imperialists started a crackdown on the ARF organizations in Kapsan and Hyesan in Korea, and in Changbai by secretly mobilizing their police forces in the border areas of Korea and in Manchuria. This resulted in the roundup of many leading members of ARF organizations, including Kwon Yong Byok and Ri Je Sun, and in the destruction of a number of revolutionary organizations.

Kim Il Sung immediately took steps to protect the revolutionary organizations from the enemy's reach and restructure or rearrange them on the one hand, and to extend the armed struggle and putting the preparations for an all- people resistance into high gear on the other. He worked heart and soul, day and night. Kim Jong Suk knew better than any one else how much pain Kim Il Sung was feeling about the trials the revolutionary organizations were undergoing and the arrest of his comrades due to the "Hyesan incident", and how much he was striving to establish contacts with fighters in the homeland, including Pak Tal, whose whereabouts were untraceable.

As part of his effort to establish contact with Pak Tal, Kim Il Sung had dispatched Ma Tong Hui the previous November. When Ma was arrested, Kim Il Sung spent several days in deep thought, and dispatched another operative by the name of Paek Yong Chol, who was familiar with the topography of the homeland. In the process of long search, Paek finally met Pak Tal, who had returned to Unhung after moving about the east coast area to dodge the enemy's search. Paek met the political commissar of the 7th Regiment and Kim Hong Su at a rendezvous, and handed over a letter from Pak Tal to them. The political commissar and Kim Hong Su brought Pak Tal's letter to Headquarters. In his letter, Pak Tal wrote that he had been staying in other places to avoid the enemy's roundup before returning to Unhung; during his absence the organizations had been wrecked, and the enemy's arrests had been continuing, and he was at a loss what to do in the future. Now that several members of the Korean National Liberation Union (KNLU) were undergoing hardships, he was not in a position to move. He earnestly requested that an operative be sent from Headquarters.

After perusing Pak Tal's letter, Kim Il Sung sent for the political commissar of the 7th Regiment, and asked him to recommend a person who was well-versed in the situation in the homeland, referring to the need to dispatch an operative to Pak Tal as soon as possible.

Kim Jong Suk volunteered for this mission.

Kim Il Sung looked at her for a good while, without saying a word. His heart was as heavy as lead, for the job she had requested was very challenging.

"I think I am eligible for the job because I am familiar with underground work in the homeland and somewhat with the situation in the homeland," said Kim Jong Suk.

Her request proceeded from her noble sense of obligation to achieve what Ma Tong Hui and his wife had striven but failed to do. Upon her repeated request, Kim Il Sung decided to send her on the mission.

Kim Il Sung said to Kim Jong Suk that he had decided to dispatch her on his behalf in order to quickly rehabilitate the revolutionary organizations, including the KNLU, wrecked by the enemy's roundup, and inspire Pak Tal and other revolutionaries in the homeland with fresh confidence. He asked her to send his militant regards to the revolutionaries active in the homeland.

The following day, Kim Jong Suk left for the homeland, in the company of two other guerrillas. Somewhere near Chongrim-ri, Pochon Sub-county, Korea, after a trek of about 40 km through no-man's land, they were greeted by Kim Hong Su and Paek Yong Chol.

Guided by the latter, the team resumed its journey, travelling through the night, and camped in a rocky cave in Chonsangsu, lying between Onsuphyong and Taejinphyong.

Kim Jong Suk divided the team into two groups, dispatching one formed of Paek Yong Chol and Kim Hong Su to Tongpho-ri, Unhung Sub-county, entrusting them with the task of finding Pak Tal as quickly as possible. She let the other group remain in the areas of Onsuphyong and Taejinphyong in Pochon Sub-county to continue working there. She arranged the date of contact and the signal required, and went down to the Onsuphyong village, in the company of one other guerrilla. While talking with the owner of a house standing isolated from the neighbourhood, she got acquainted with the after-effects of the "Hyesan incident" in this area, and decided to go to Taejinphyong and Ryosu-ri to get more first-hand information about the situation before meeting Pak Tal.

She hoped to find the latter through meetings with the members of the organizations still intact and the family members of those already arrested. Now that the enemy was putting surveillance on the members of the organizations who had dodged the enemy's roundup and their family members, it was very dangerous to meet them in person.

Kim Jong Suk, however, did not hesitate and walked to the area in the vicinity of the Hachon village in Ryosu-ri, via Taejinphyong. There she met the family of a member of an Anti-Japanese Association who had been arrested as a victim of the "Hyesan incident", and, guided by them, was able to meet other people who might have wind of Pak Tal's whereabouts.

At dawn the next day, Paek Yong Chol and Kim Hong Su brought Pak Tal, Ri Ryong Sul and Kim Chol Ok to the rocky cave in Chonsangsu.

Kim Jong Suk held Pak Tal's hands for a long time. After inquiring about his health, Kim Jong Suk conveyed the greetings of Commander Kim Il Sung to the revolutionaries in the homeland, and told them of the reason for her team's dispatch by Kim Il Sung and of what the Commander had said with regard to the mission. Pak Tal gave a full account of the background of the "Hyesan incident", the present state of affairs of the revolutionary organizations and the state of the work he had done so far.

According to Pak Tal, by the previous October when the "Hyesan incident" broke out, about 40 subordinate organizations of the KNLU had been organized, and these organizations had many branch organizations under various titles, such as Jonjin Association, Jongu Association, Anti-Japanese Association, Anti-Japanese Youth Corps, Anti-Japanese Children's Association and Anti-Japanese Women's Association. The Japanese roundup that ensued from the "Hyesan Incident," however, resulted in about 150 organization members and the people under their influence getting arrested, and the rest of the organization members taking

refuge in various places. Taking account of the difficult situation in the Kapsan area, Pak Tal and other hard-core members of the revolutionary organizations had decided to go into hiding in mines, factories, lumber camps or relatives' houses in various regions during the winter, and to meet again at Kapsan in the following spring to resume their work of rehabilitating the revolutionary organizations. Pak Tal himself had moved from one place to another, taking different jobs, while conducting political and organizational work, before returning in April and making preparations for the rehabilitation work. Pak Tal said that as the hard-core elements had been arrested or dispersed, and the enemy's suppression was getting more vicious, they were not in a position to take brisk action.

In the cave, a meeting of the leading members of the KNLU, including Pak Tal, was presided over by Kim Jong Suk.

She said that it was of paramount importance to protect the revolutionary organizations and their members from the ever-more vicious crackdown by the enemy. She stressed that they must not confine themselves to protecting the organizations but expand them continuously, saying that if they did not energize the activities of the organizations just because of the enemy's repression, and if they merely dodged the enemy and concerned themselves only with the protection of the organizations, they might find it difficult even to preserve the organizations themselves.

She explained that, provided they disguised the revolutionary organizations in the form of benevolent societies such as friendship associations[22] or fraternities, and let them work among the people, telling them of the brilliant victories gained by the KPRA, they might pump hope for and confidence in the future into the people who had been disheartened as a result of the "Hyesan incident", and rouse them to struggle against the Japanese.

Following this meeting, she met Pak Tal again in person to let him clearly understand Kim Il Sung's idea of forming the Anti-Japanese Guerrilla Army of Northern Korea (AJGANK) and its significance, and to inform him of the Commander's order to appoint Pak Tal as the political commissar of the AJGANK.

The efforts of Kim Jong Suk who, at the time when the Korean revolution was facing a crisis of grim trials, crossed the closely guarded frontier to meet the fighters in the homeland, conveying Kim Il Sung's instructions to them and explaining the ways for their future struggle, were quite rewarding, as they enabled the homeland revolutionary organizations and organization members in low spirits to rally themselves and conduct revolutionary activities, full of confidence in the future.

That summer, Kim Jong Suk carried out her activities with the 7th Regiment in Mengjiang and Huinan, and went to the secret camp at Xintaizi. In mid-September, she was again tasked by with underground work in the homeland. Her duty was to direct the work of the revolutionary organizations in the Phungsan area. Kim Il Sung asked her to take Pak Jong Suk and Kim Pong Sok along with her. She, however, requested that she be sent alone, saying that whenever she was to leave on different missions, she could not feel at ease about the thought that something might happen to him, and that she would feel relieved to see enough comrades remain around him. She assured him that she was already familiar with the Phungsan area.

Kim Il Sung thanked her with deep emotion, and said that he would always remember the warm love of his comrades for their Commander. He broke off for a short while, looking at her standing in silence, before continuing, "You comrades always think of my safety, yet I am always among guerrillas wherever I go, ain't I? I am always accompanied by bodyguards. I have frequently sent you to dangerous places, and I think you need to understand my feelings each time I send you, a woman, alone."

Kim Il Sung's words, each overflowing with his boundless love for and obligation to his revolutionary fighters, warmed Kim Jong Suk's heart.

Prior to their departure, Kim Il Sung gave a pistol to each of the team. Pak Jong Suk had already worked together with Kim Jong Suk during her underground activities in Taoquanli and the underground mission in the homeland in the previous year. Kim Pong Sok, too, had accompanied her as her bodyguard during the underground mission in the previous year.

On the first night after leaving Headquarters, the team camped at a hunter's lodge in Shierdaogou, not far from the secret camp at Ganbahezi where the six members of the sewing unit, including Pak Su Hwan and Kim Yong Gum, had fallen in action during the fierce battle with the "punitive" force the previous winter.

Kim Jong Suk told the other team members that they would go to the homeland as quickly as possible to hasten the date of Korea's liberation, the lifelong desire of the fallen comrades, and that they should do what the fallen comrades had failed to do, so as to pay off their old scores.

Next day, the team left the camp site, and reached the top of a mountain in the vicinity of Shisandaogou in the evening. The drugstore in Sanshuigou that had been previously used as a liaison point was no longer there, as the family had moved to Riwon following the arrest of their son, a member of a Party group. Only when they met the host of the inn in Ohamdok did they get rough information about the situation in Sinpha that quite a few organizations had been destroyed and many comrades had been put behind bars.

The following day, Kim Jong Suk met the chief of the special branch of the Singalpha ARF organization at the foot of Nan Hill in Sinpha, and assigned him the task of protecting the underground operatives and the paramilitary organizations

to be formed in the future, by taking advantage of his position in an enemy organization. That night, the team moved to a forest about two kilometres away from Sinpha, where, on the following day, Kim Jong Suk met organization members and pointed out the need and ways for rehabilitating the wrecked organizations and expanding them. This meeting marked an occasion of re-invigorating the organizations in Sinpha that were inactive for the time being to take brisk action, and became a new fuse for kindling more fierce flames of struggle in this area.

Kim Jong Suk's team left Sinpha for the house of Ju Pyong Pho in the Yangji village, Mujo-ri, Phungsan County.

At that time, Ju Pyong Pho was undergoing harassment by the Japanese. A student at a certain school in Seoul, he had been engaged in revolutionary activities and, at that time, he was staying in his old home, where he was teaching a night course. Claiming that Ju had been spreading "subversive propaganda" at the night course, the enemy were calling him to the police sub-station at least once every few days to inquire into his activities.

Born action-orientated, Ju began to fret as he became unable to move freely because of the enemy's surveillance. When he met Kim Jong Suk, he was flabbergasted at first, before coming to himself, holding her hands with delight for a good while without uttering a word and finally requesting that he be allowed to enlist in the KPRA as he was no longer in a position to move freely in the homeland.

Kim Jong Suk, however, was more concerned with his relations with the people in Seoul than with his request for enlistment. Ju said that in Seoul, Inchon and Yongdungpho there were many anti-Japanese campaigners hailing from Phungsan, and also some of his former comrades who had been engaged in the student movement in Longjing, all of whom he could make contact with.

Kim Jong Suk explained to him the prevailing situation and the future direction of the Korean revolution, as well as Kim Il Sung's policy on making preparations for an all-people resistance. She said that, given the situation, the Seoul area in the homeland would be an appropriate theatre of activity for Ju, as he was already familiar with the situation there and had had experience in the student movement and underground activities. When he went to Seoul again, she said, he should contact Ri Young, whom she had met in Pukchong and dispatched to Seoul in July the previous year, form an organization in the school in which he had been enrolled, and go among the workers and labour unions in Seoul, Yongdungpho and Inchon gradually to bring them under the guidance of the ARF organizations.

A few days later, she met Ri In Mo and other hard-core members of the revolutionary organizations in Phungsan, and explained the tasks to be shouldered by the revolutionary organizations in Phungsan. Then, she sent Ju Pyong Pho to Seoul.

She left the Yangji village for Saichon, Sinwon-ri, about four kilometers from the Phungsan county town. There, she met Won Chung Hui, head of the Phungsan County chapter of Chondoism. Won wept with delight to see her again after one full year, and inquired after Kim Il Sung. He continued to say that he had been too shocked following the arrest of Tojong Pak In Jin to do anything properly, but now that Kim Il Sung had sent such a distinguished operative as Kim Jong Suk, he felt like the captain of a storm-tossed ship sighting a lighthouse. Then, he explained the background to Tojong Pak In Jin's arrest, the current state of affairs in the upper echelons of Chondoism in Seoul, and his work with the heads of regional chapters of Chondoism in Hwanghae Province, South Phyongan Province, North Hamgyong Province and other areas.

Kim Jong Suk told Won that now that Tojong Pak In Jin was behind bars, Won would have to take the lead in working with

regional pho organizations throughout the country, including Seoul, while uniting all the followers of Chondoism throughout the country behind the anti-Japanese national united front. She added that excellent young people among the members of the Young Chondoist Party should be selected to reinforce the paramilitary corps, and military training for the corps should be strengthened so that all preparations could be made for an armed revolt when required.

Saying that what she had taught was a source of fresh confidence, Won gave her his word that he would devote his whole being to the sacred cause of national liberation along the road indicated by Kim Il Sung.

The following day, Kim Jong Suk called at a secret base in the Phungsan area. In the afternoon, she arranged a meeting of the chiefs of the KPRA small unit, political operatives team and the heads of the revolutionary organizations active in the areas of Phungsan and Huchi Pass. At the meeting, she stressed the importance of firmly preserving the underground organizations from the enemy's suppression and reversing the temporary confusion in the work of rehabilitating the wrecked organizations. She said that transforming the areas in the vicinity of the secret base along revolutionary lines should be done through intensive political education among the masses of the people, and dealt with the matter of expanding paramilitary organizations, including the paramilitary corps, to lay a strong mass foundation for armed struggle.

Winding up her work in this area, Kim Jong Suk hurried on with the march to cross the Amnok River immediately.

As soon as she arrived at the secret camp near Xintaizi, she gave a full account of the activities of her team to Kim Il Sung.

Kim Jong Suk's revolutionary activities in the area of Phungsan made a great contribution to extending the organizational network of the ARF throughout the country and promoting the preparations

for all-people resistance. In the Phungsan area, the ARF organizations grew in strength and scope, many paramilitary corps were set up in various places, and material support to the guerrilla army was brought into high gear.

Ju Pyong Pho went to Seoul, where he enrolled at a law school and contacted Ri Young; some time later, he gained a strong foothold in the industrial areas centred on Yongdungpho. He transmitted Kim Il Sung's line of national liberation to the communist group in Seoul and, in close contact with Kim Sam Ryong, a leading labour union figure, infiltrated deep into the labour union movement in the areas between Soul and Inchon, thus greatly contributing to making the labour union movement in Seoul a link in the whole chain of the undertaking to implement Kim Il Sung's line of national liberation.

Ju Pyong Pho's assistant-cum-liaison man was Ri In Mo. Ri frequently traveled from Phungsan to Seoul. In consultation with Ju, Ri also went over to Tokyo, where he worked to transform the Phungu Students Friendship Society in Tokyo, made up of students hailing from Phungsan, into a subordinate organization of the ARF.

Even after Korea's liberation, Ju Pyong Pho remained in Seoul, conducting underground struggle to implement Kim Il Sung's line of national reunification and of south Korean revolution. When the first kind of order and medal of the DPRK was instituted, Ju was put on the list of those to receive them. Ju was faithful to the conviction and will instilled into him by Kim Jong Suk, to the last moment of his life. In March 1950, he was arrested and executed.

In his memoirs, titled, My Life and Faith, Ri In Mo wrote in detail about the death of Ju Pyong Pho and recollected his two emotional meetings with Kim Jong Suk.

The winter of 1938 was the bitterest time of trial in the history of the Korean people's anti-Japanese armed struggle. Hard hit by heavy political and military blows administered by the KPRA's positive offensive from the rear and by the vigorous anti-Japanese struggle of the masses of the Korean people, the Japanese imperialists launched an unprecedented reactionary offensive in an attempt to check the revolutionary advance of the Korean people.

In the meantime, the after-effects of the expedition to Rehe[23], an expedition masterminded by Leftist adventurists, involved a great loss for the units of the Anti-Japanese Allied Army, resulting in the KPRA having to fight almost single-handed against huge enemy forces that had been reinforced in the southwest area of Mt. Paektu. Thereby, a crisis loomed before the Korean revolution.

Kim Il Sung presided at a meeting of the military and political cadres of the KPRA from November 25 through December 6 in Nanpaizi, surrounded by a force of the enemy about 10,000 strong.

At the meeting, Kim Il Sung lambasted the "Left" adventurist nature of the expedition to Rehe and its grave after-effects, and set out new military and political tasks to be tackled by the KPRA-to make a quick thrust into the border areas along the Amnok and Tuman Rivers centring on Mt. Paektu and to launch brisk military and political activities over wide areas, so as to pump fresh confidence in victory into the revolutionary organizations and the masses of the people, and baffle the frantic attempts of the Japanese imperialists. These new tasks were aimed at a fresh offensive geared to bringing about an uninterrupted advance of the Korean revolution as a whole by sweeping away the after-effects of the "Left" adventurist line of the expedition to Rehe as soon as

possible, and holding fast to the Juche-oriented attitude and independent principles of the Korean revolution.

The meeting decided on the formation of three directional forces and an independent regiment, and allocated the theatre of activity for each force. The 2nd Directional Army, to which Kim Jong Suk belonged, was to carry out activities in Korea and in the border areas, under the command of Kim Il Sung.

Prior to dispatching each force to its new theatre of war, Kim Il Sung wished it success in its struggle, and ensured that its members were supplied with new weapons and new winter uniforms, underwear, leggings, shoes and parched-rice flour. The new uniforms and leggings were those that had been prepared by Kim Jong Suk and the members of the sewing unit in a short span of time through several busy nights in the forest around Erdaohuayuan, Mengjiang County, on the instructions of Kim Il Sung.

Following the meeting, the directional forces left Nanpaizi. The 2nd Directional Army, too, set about the expedition, penetrating rings of encirclement of the Japanese "punitive" forces in the forests of Nanpaizi. From the outset, it had to march with a huge "punitive" force on its heels. This trek was what is now known as the Arduous March, an unprecedented event in history.

In his reminiscences, With the Century, President Kim Il Sung wrote his recollection of this expedition as follows:

"The Arduous March was, in a nutshell, a constant, non-stop struggle against the worst of natural conditions, hunger, exhaustion, disease, and of course the brutal enemy. All of these were accompanied by yet another severe struggle: that of not giving in to all these hardships. It was primarily a struggle to survive and to destroy the enemy. These were the main contents of the Arduous March. Indeed, it was a series of incredible ordeals and hardships from beginning to end."

That year, the first frost fell before the Hangawi Day[24], and after that the first snow fell heavily. That winter witnessed the heaviest snowfalls and flesh-biting cold in 100 years.

Kim Jong Suk marched along with the crack-shot team of the 7th Regiment at the rear. The enemy's pursuit was dogged. From the very beginning, the enemy used the tactic of "violent attack and tenacious pursuit", which meant harassing the opponent ceaselessly by clinging to it like a tick.

Kim Jong Suk, together with the other crack shots, would lie in ambush in the snow to hit back at the pursuing enemy several times a day.

Sometimes, she would work with Regimental Commander O Jung Hup in laying grenades as mines in the snow. In the snow-bound forest, the enemy did not dare to get ahead of the marching column of the KPRA or to make a detour; they had no choice but to follow the tracks of the KPRA unit. Taking advantage of this situation, the KPRA would lay grenade booby traps and set up detonator lines. The pursuing enemy would walk through the lines unawares, only to meet death. Trying to avoid such traps, the enemy would try to avoid the direct trail made by the guerrillas, only to fall into ambushes laid by Kim Jong Suk and the other crackshots. Once, she shot dead a Japanese battalion commander far in the distance, to the amazement of her fellow guerrillas, and Kim Il Sung called her a crack shot. Her unparalleled valour was displayed to the full in the battles, she foughting in the first month of the Arduous March-an attack on an internment village near Erdaohuayuan, Mengjiang County, raids into Wudaocha and Sidaocha, an attack on an internment village at Yaogou, Linjiang County, ambushes near Mayihe and Yantonglazi, and a raid into Wangjiadian. During the Arduous March, she helped and led her fellow guerrillas forward by giving full play to her indefatigable will power, self-sacrificing endeavour and warm revolutionary comradeship. Despite ceaseless battles and marching, she still

collected dried edible grass, fruits and wild grape vines, and dug grass roots out of deep snow. Once when she was boiling grass gruel together with members of the cooking unit, rifle shots sounded all of a sudden. She immediately took off her white cape, and wrapped it round the burning gruel cauldron. The other guerrillas followed suit. The gruel they brought that way was a source of great strength to the soldiers so much that after Korea's liberation the participants in the Arduous March frequently talked about it.

In early January 1939, one month after the start of the Arduous March, when the KPRA unit arrived at Qidaogou, Changbai County, the enemy mobilized the huge force that had been deployed earlier in the areas of Changbai and Linjiang Counties, as well as planes, for "punitive" operations.

In order to cope with this grave situation, Kim Il Sung put forward a new tactical policy of dispersing the main-force unit in three directions, according to which the wounded and sick guerrillas, as well as the women guerrillas, were to go to the Qingfeng Secret Camp.

Before leaving Headquarters, Kim Jong Suk took out a bag of parched-rice flour she used to carry in her knapsack, and handed it to an orderly of Headquarters, saying, "Although it is just a cupful or so, when you have no food to serve, please offer it to the Commander."

The story of A Cupful of Parched-Rice Flour, known among the Korean people as something like a legend, originated precisely in this bag of parched-rice flour.

Grasping the hands of the bodyguards, she entreated them to take care of the Commander's safety. Then, she left for the Qingfeng Secret Camp, turning round to gaze wistfully back at Headquarters from time to time.

The Qingfeng Secret Camp was a service camp of the KPRA. At that time, it accommodated the members of the supply unit of

the 7th Regiment and the wounded guerrillas. Om Kwang Ho, who was the chief supply officer of the regiment, was in charge of the camp. Om had worked with Kim Jong Suk in 1937, when the latter had been engaged in underground activities in Taoquanli. When sending him to Qingfeng, Kim Il Sung had given him the tasks of growing crops to build up food reserves for the unit, and building additional barracks in anticipation of a possible winter military and political study course by the unit. But Om neglected these tasks. He did not build additional barracks, nor did he store up enough food reserve. The routine life in the camp was not on a regular basis, and one or two meals a day were all that were provided. More surprisingly, there was not a barracks worthy of the name that could accommodate the newcomers.

Kim Jong Suk and her fellow newcomers, including the wounded, found that their first priority was to build a barracks in flesh-numbing cold. The atmosphere at the Qingfeng Secret Camp was infused with lethargy, disarray and despondence, a situation far removed from the ongoing Arduous March under the command of Kim Il Sung. Kim Jong Suk could not remain as a mere onlooker. A soldier of the KPRA, wherever he or she might be, should breathe and act solely as guided by the revolutionary idea of Kim Il Sung, she thought. She first managed to put the barracks in order and improved the medical treatment of the patients, while at the same time explaining Kim Il Sung's new policy advanced at the Nanpaizi Meeting to the guerrillas who had been separated for a long time from their respective units, and informing them of the victories gained by the main-force unit in battles, thus boosting their morale.

She also channeled efforts into equipping the inhabitants of the camp with Kim Il Sung's idea through military and political study. She had to argue with Om and Kim Jun (alias Ri Tong Gol), the political chief of the camp, about such study. Om and Kim Jun did not agree to her suggestion, claiming that, as half of the occupants

of the camp were either weak or wounded, they would not be interested in study.

Nevertheless, Kim Jong Suk started studying with her fellow women guerrillas straightaway. Some time later, the wounded took part in the study sessions one by one, and almost all the members of the camp began to divert their attention to her. Alarmed at this, Om could not but change his former attitude and declare that studying would be started under the direction of Kim Jun. Claiming that the military and political study sessions were his own brainchild, Om tried to divert the guerrillas' attention to himself.

One day in early February 1939, a seminar on Kim Il Sung's speech at the Nanpaizi meeting was held at the secret camp. Listening to the opinions of the other guerrillas, Om complained that their discussion was unsatisfactory, and dwelt on his own so-called "theory" that revolutionary strategy and tactics should be applied, not prompted by one's own subjective ambition, but in accordance with the objective situation and circumstances, and that, accordingly, at such a time as the present winter, when the prevailing situation was difficult and unfavourable, they should step back temporarily and wait for a favourable situation to arrive, instead of having direct confrontations with the enemy.

One of the women guerrillas asked him why he thought Kim Il Sung's policy of advancing into the homeland to stimulate a fresh upsurge in the Korean revolution was an expression of subjective ambition. Om stiffened, and his facial expression changed all of a sudden. He then retorted, "Let me ask you. You always talk as if you are ready to make a thrust into the homeland right now. Why, then, did you come to this secret camp, instead of going to the homeland?"

"... ."

"Look," he continued. "Revolution is not subject to one's thought but to the objective situation and circumstances."

Kim Jong Suk could not tolerate his opinion any longer, as what he asserted ran counter to Kim Il Sung's idea and was an explicit challenge to the latter's idea and line. She stood up and retorted, "Your assertion seems to be that the destiny of the Korean revolution decisively depends on the objective situation. But I think you are wrong. We do not deny, of course, that the revolutionary struggle is affected by the objective situation. Yet, one must not think it absolute; the more unfavourable the situation becomes, the more actively revolutionaries should strive to turn negatives into positives, bracing themselves up. This is what the Commander wants us to do. The assertion that the best way in a difficult situation is to step back and wait for a favourable time, rather than fighting the enemy, is nothing but an expression of escapism and capitulation. At present, we have no rear to retreat to, so if we are to defeat the enemy, we must shed blood and boldly overcome challenges and difficulties. Revolutionaries can emerge victorious only through struggle."

Om, in an attempt to save face, babbled about Lenin's statement of "one step forward and two steps back", even banging his fist on the desk. He went so far as to speak ill of the expedition into the border areas by the main-force unit of the KPRA, calling it "a reckless action." Kim Jong Suk unhesitatingly criticized his sophistry, saying: "We are Korean revolutionaries who have taken the road of revolution under the banner of the Korean revolution held aloft by Commander Kim Il Sung, and are fighting with full determination to implement the revolutionary line advanced by him. The Commander is now on an expedition towards the border areas, in command of the unit, to break through the challenges and difficulties, and bring about a great turn in the Korean revolution. What he is doing is the one and only way to save the Korean revolution, rebuild the wrecked revolutionary organizations in the homeland and inspire the people with confidence in victory. In the light of this correct revolutionary policy of the Commander,

statement about 'nadir of the revolution' and that we must refrain from fighting the enemy and advancing into the border areas are very ill-natured and dangerous, running counter to the revolutionary line of the Commander."

Lost for words, Om walked out. But instead of pondering his own ideological defect, he tried to cover up his counterrevolutionary identity as an opportunist and capitulationist. One night, he mustered all the guerrillas in the secret camp, trying to get them to find fault with Kim Jong Suk and her fellow women guerrillas, so as to bring them to their knees. Failing to find any fault with them, he used the case of a new recruit from Changbai who had been punished for a slight infringement of discipline to frame Kim Jong Suk as a "spy". Om had the recruit tortured and forced him to "confess" that he had collaborated with some women guerrillas in espionage work, and seized "poison" as material evidence. The "poison" was, in fact, a box of powdered toothpaste. Om then arrested Kim Jong Suk and some of her fellow women guerrillas. Kim Jong Suk could not restrain her indignation. She denounced Om, saying, "You know us very well. What makes you charge us as spies of the Japanese?

"...,

"If we were spies, you would not have returned alive from Taoquanli, would you? How can you be so shameless?"

In fact, Om owed his life to Kim Jong Suk. In August 1937, when she had been arrested by the enemy, Kim Jong Suk had kept the secret of the organization at the risk of her own life, thus saving the revolutionary organizations, and Om's life.

Kim Jong Suk continued, "We are soldiers of the KPRA. We are soldiers of General Kim Il Sung. Who are you? You are an enemy of the revolution. The revolution will never pardon you, and you deserve death as a counterrevolutionary."

In reply to her protest, Om said, " What makes you so confident? The main-force unit members have all perished in the snow." Such a preposterous remark disclosed his true identity.

Om was a careerist, steeped in vicious factional strife. He had plunged into revolutionary movement in Yanji in the midst of the May 30 Uprising[25]. He had once worked as a company political instructor, but had been unpopular from the first. During the anti-"Minsaengdan" campaign, he had made ultra-revolutionary remarks frequently, inflicting distress on the people. Kim Il Sung, however, educated him and entrusted him again with the responsibility of a company political instructor. When Om continued committing the same mistakes, the Commander had sent him to the support camp to give him another chance to correct his mistakes, assigning him to the task of growing crops, restoring wrecked revolutionary organizations in the enemy-held areas and storing up enough food reserves for the unit. However, far from discharging his duty, Om harboured complaints about his position, neglected his responsibilities, and relapsed into a betrayer of the revolution, as his ideology degenerated.

The source of Kim Jong Suk's great pain during her stay in Qingfeng was not the deadly torture she was subjected to by Om or suspicion of her involvement in "espionage work", but the fact that Om's crime of opposing Kim Il Sung's revolutionary idea and line was being overlooked.

When a messenger from Headquarters arrived at the secret camp, Kim Jong Suk, even though her hands were bound, met him immediately, and asked him to report to Kim Il Sung about the abnormal situation in the camp. The messenger had come to the camp just to deliver food and goods which had been captured in the battle of Shisandaowan and sent by Kim Il Sung on the occasion of the Lunar New Year Day.

Utterly taken aback by what was taking place in the camp, the messenger failed to utter even a word.

Om Kwang Ho and Kim Jun, too, handed to the messenger a letter to Kim Il Sung and an envelope enclosing the "poison", asking him to inform Headquarters of the "spy case" as soon as possible.

The messenger hurried back to Headquarters. Upon the report of the messenger and his perusal of the letter, Kim Il Sung became enraged, and, despite the dissuasion of his men, went so far as to take a taste of the "poison". When it proved to be toothpaste powder he dispatched the political commissar of the 7th Regiment to the Qingfeng Secret Camp there and then, and took appropriate steps to redress the situation.

Om Kwang Ho was brought to trial at Beidadingzi on April 5, 1939.

On the day of Om's execution, Kim Jong Suk strongly denounced his crime as follows:

"We must resolutely support and defend the revolutionary idea of the Commander, and launch a fierce struggle against any attempt to pick faults with it, any time and any place, with a high sense of political awareness and revolutionary conviction."

Recollecting those days, President Kim Il Sung said:

"Kim Jong Suk led others in criticizing Om for his defeatist tendency. She fought without compromise against wrong ideas that ran counter to Headquarters' lines and strategic policies. She was a thoroughgoing advocate of our ideology."

To resolutely support and defend the revolutionary idea of Commander Kim Il Sung, even at the risk of her life –this was a constant principle and firm determination that ran through Kim Jong Suk's whole life.

Upon her return from the Qingfeng Secret Camp in early March prior to Om's execution, Kim Jong Suk joined Headquarters in the Arduous March. Regarding it as her primary duty and a task entrusted to her by history and the revolution to

ensure the safety of Commander Kim Il Sung in the course of the march, she did her best at all times to protect the Commander.

One dawn, when the unit was ordered to take a rest on a hill after marching all night across mountain ridges in the rear of Dongdadingzi, the guerrillas, dog-tired, fell asleep the minute their backs touched the snow-covered ground.

A few minutes later, however, gunshots rang out from the foot of the hill. The guerrillas immediately woke up and ran towards the place the shots had come from, to find Kim Jong Suk firing back at the enemy's "punitive" troops that had been climbing up the hill by stealth under the cover of a blizzard. She had descended the hill, and had been picking grass roots at a place far removed from Headquarters to prepare breakfast. She had chosen the place as it was where the enemy had to pass through to climb to reach Headquarters. She had detected the enemy first, and signaled by firing at them.

"What would have happened if you had not raised the alarm?" All the guerrillas spoke highly of her action.

Meanwhile, O Jung Hup's regiment, which had been active in the Shanggangqu area, returned to Headquarters. The 8th Regiment and an Independent Battalion, which had been active in the Fusang area, too, joined Headquarters as well.

Now that the regiments that had been engaged in dispersed actions had gathered and were set to move together, salt posed itself as a big problem. Enough quantities of food could be obtained through battles, yet salt was rarely to be found, as it was under strict control by the enemy. The unit had run out of salt several days previously, and the guerrillas on the march began to sway as if under the influence of alcohol, and their faces were swollen for want of salinity. Some of them could not open their eyes as their eyelids were swollen shut. At that time, a guerrilla hailing from the region nearby was assigned the task by Kim Il Sung of obtaining salt. The man contacted his

former villagers, and was able to purchase a considerable amount of salt. The supply officers distributed the salt to regiments and companies, which immediately cooked meals using it. Kim Jong Suk, who was always concerned about the safety of Kim Il Sung on a priority basis, poured vinegar over the salt. The salt changed colour. She then dissolved the salt in water and dipped a silver spoon and chopsticks and another spoon and chopsticks made of Dahurian buckthorn in the water. The tint of the spoons and chopsticks changed gradually, an indication of poison in the salt. She immediately reported this to Kim Il Sung.

Kim Il Sung poured the salt into the camp-fire, which blazed with a blue colour. Obviously the salt was poisoned. The enemy's plot to destroy the revolutionary Headquarters was foiled in this way, but the guerrillas of the 7th and 8th regiments were in danger, as they had already taken meals cooked with the poisoned salt, and had left to attack a lumber station.

The enemy troops who had sent poisoned salt into the revolutionary army waited long enough for the poison to take effect, and started their attack.

Sending for the 7th and 8th regiments, Kim Il Sung prepared the staff of Headquarters, who had not consumed the poisoned salt, for the battle. Apart from the staff of Headquarters, most of the unit had already been poisoned. As Kim Il Sung recalled later, this situation was more dangerous than the time when the unit had been surrounded by enemy troops several thousands strong at Xiaotanghe in 1937. It was a do-or-die battle--either to perish or to preserve the forces and continue to put up resistance against the Japanese.

"Issue all the ammunition. Let us fight a life-or-death battle here today," said Kim Il Sung grimly.

The members of the machine-gun platoon and the Headquarters bodyguards desperately fought against the charging enemy. In the

meantime, the 7th and 8th regiments were able to make their way back into a relatively safer forest area.

At the same time as she was fighting the enemy, Kim Jong Suk arranged for green beans she had been keeping for an emergency to be infused and distributed among the poisoned soldiers to neutralize the poison. Some time later, the 7th and 8th regiments recovered, and joined the battle. The enemy that had attempted to either destroy or capture Headquarters and the main-force unit at a stroke, turned tail, leaving numerous corpses behind.

That night, Regimental Commander O Jung Hup and other commanders called on Kim Jong Suk, and expressed their sincere appreciation of her action in saving Headquarters and the Korean revolution from a critical situation.

SONG OF VICTORY OVER MUSAN

The Arduous March brought the main force of the KPRA safely to Beidadingzi in spring.

In April 1939, Kim Il Sung called a meeting of cadres of the KPRA at Beidadingzi to review the victory gained through the Arduous March and put forward a new policy of striking the Japanese aggressors over and over again through a positive counteroffensive and advancing into the homeland.

Following the meeting in Beidadingzi, the KPRA units launched a spring counteroffensive in the areas southwest of Mt. Paektu, and arrived at the wide e tableland in Xiaodeshui, where they pitched their tents on the eve of May Day and changed into summer uniforms. The following day, May Day celebrations and art performances were held on the grassy plain of Xiaodeshui in anticipation of the advance into the homeland. When the grand

May Day celebrations were over, Kim Il Sung went to the secret camp on Mt. Kanbaek escorted by the Guard Company and some members of a small unit. At the secret camp, he dispatched to Rimyongsu, Samjiyon, Mupho and Taehongdan scouting parties, whose mission it was to sound out the opinions of the residents there and check the enemy's movements. When everything was confirmed, he mapped out a complete operations plan for advancing into the homeland, and returned to the secret camp on Heixiazigou to make a final check of the guerrillas' preparations for departure.

At that time, Kim Jong Suk's health was poor, due to the suffering she had been subjected to at the Qingfeng Secret Camp. Headquarters recommended that she remain in the hospital at the support camp to recuperate. Kim Jong Suk, however, insisted time and again that she should be included in the expeditionary corps bound for the homeland, saying she could not bring herself to be excluded from the operations in the homeland even though she might happen to fall down in the course of the expedition. Kim Il Sung accepted her request, to her delight.

Early the following day, May 18, the unit crossed the Amnok River at Dam No. 5. At that time, azaleas were in full bloom on the homeland side of the river.

Kim Jong Suk rushed to take hold of azalea bushes, tears of emotion and joy running down her cheeks, and made a careful pick of azaleas wet with dew to present them to Kim Il Sung. Taking the bunch of azaleas, Kim Il Sung said, with deep emotion: "The more I see azaleas in Korea, the more beautiful I find them."

The unit resumed its march under the shining rays of the sun. A few hours of trekking brought them to a thick forest of fir, silver fir, larch, and the like. It was named Chongbong, signifying that it is always thick with evergreen needle-leaf trees. Kim Il Sung ordered camp to be pitched there, the first camp in the homeland.

Though the camp was for only one night, Kim Jong Suk did her best to keep the site shipshape, as intended by Kim Il Sung. She pitched a special kitchen tent, and even arranged a well.

When the preparations for camping were over, Kim Jong Suk, together with other guerrillas, stripped the bark off trees and wrote the following revolutionary mottoes on the trunks: "Let us fight on for freedom, independence and emancipation of the Korean nation!" "Korean youth, come quickly to take an active part in the war against the Japanese!" "Arise and unite, you working masses of the world, and fight for freedom and emancipation!"

Each letter of the mottoes Kim Jong Suk wrote has been preserved and will be preserved for ever, as an eternal eulogy to victory in revolution.

The first night in the homeland was so unforgettable that the soldiers sat round the campfire and continued talking about the homeland, playing the harmonica and flute. Kim Jong Suk, too, sang songs around the campfire, together with Jang Chol Gu and Jang Jong Suk. Next morning, the unit left Chongbong for Konchang, where they bivouacked for one night before resuming their march towards Pegae Hill.

At a meeting of commanding officers held at the campsite on Pegae Hill on May 20, Kim Il Sung outlined his tactic known as "one thousand miles at a run". This involved slipping into the Musan area in broad daylight along the Kapsan-Musan road running across the wide plain of the highlands beneath Mt. Paektu, now that the enemy were bent on rummaging through the mountainous regions and the areas along the Amnok River centring on Mt. Phothae, and attaching more importance to their night surveillance than guard in the daylight.

The unit left Pegae Hill for Lake Samji, where they took a rest and had lunch.

Kim Jong Suk brought a cup of crystal-clear water out of Lake Samji for Kim Il Sung. After drinking the water, Kim Il Sung said,

"The scenery of Lake Samji is very picturesque, and the water tastes excellent. Let us draw energy from this water, and fight bravely to liberate the homeland."

The order for marching was issued, but the women guerrillas were reluctant to take leave of Lake Samji.

Kim Jong Suk told her fellow women guerrillas that they would surely come to this picturesque lake again in company of Kim Il Sung after the liberation of the homeland.

After leaving Lake Samji, the unit marched in broad daylight along the Kapsan-Musan road that had been constructed by the Japanese with the aim of expediting "punitive" operations against the Anti-Japanese Guerrilla Army.

The unit marched rapidly along this 40 km road, and reached Mupho on the Tuman River in the evening of the same day. They pitched camp there. That night Kim Jong Suk and her fellow women guerrillas made 300 arm-bands each embroidered with a five-pointed golden star, the symbol of the KPRA.

Early in the morning of May 22, the unit left for Taehongdan, under the personal command of Kim Il Sung.

Kim Il Sung dispatched the 7th Regiment in the direction of Singaechok, and led the 8th Regiment and guard Company towards Sinsadong. At Sinsadong, Kim Jong Suk and the women guerrillas called at a log-cabin of an old lumberman and his young daughter. The owners of the house, as soon as they saw the women in uniform, in the light of pine torches, fell back in alarm. In the room were only an old wooden box, a cauldron, and a few cracked bowls on a shelf, and nothing more. No bedding of any kind was available. The old man and his daughter were wearing rags of hemp cloth, torn here and there and barely covering their flesh.

"Please relax, old man. We are the soldiers of the Korean People's Revolutionary Army engaged in struggle for the sake of the poor Korean people," Kim Jong Suk reassured the old man,

and took the hands of his daughter. "Oh, what has made your hands so cracked?" asked Kim Jong Suk. The hands of the daughter were cracking here and there, looking terrible. Crest-fallen, the young girl did not reply, tears welling up in her eyes. Kim Jong Suk took a box of skin cream out of her knapsack, and rubbed the cream on her hands. She then gave the box of cream to the young girl, instructing her to wash her hands day and night and rub them with the cream. The old man looked at them, and asked if they had come from Mt. Paektu.

"We are soldiers of the KPRA fighting against the Japanese for Korea's liberation under the command of Kim Il Sung," replied Kim Jong Suk. She explained that General Kim Il Sung, in command of a large unit, had come to Musan through rings of Japanese guard lines on the border in order to pump into the Korean people confidence in the liberation of their homeland. The old man was pleased and surprised at the same time to hear this news, and asked her to arrange a meeting for him with Kim Il Sung. Kim Jong Suk took the old man and his daughter to the boarding-house of the lumber station, where Kim Il Sung was staying. At that time, Kim Il Sung was conducting political work with the lumberjacks, who crowded the room. Seeing General Kim Il Sung, the old man said that now he had nothing to regret and repeatedly expressed his intention to devote his remaining years to the cause of Korea's liberation. Many lumbermen volunteered to join the army one after another. The whole village was enveloped in a festive atmosphere. The women of the village helped Kim Jong Suk with meals for Headquarters.

At dawn the following day, Kim Jong Suk and other members of the Guard Company and 8th Regiment marched to the tableland of Taehongdan, under the command of Kim Il Sung. While waiting for the 7th Regiment to return, Kim Il Sung planned a swift battle there in anticipation of the enemy's pursuit in order to

give a telling blow to the enemy at Taehongdan. The Taehongdan tableland was a relatively wide marsh in the highlands, surrounded by Mt. Taeroun to the east, Kkachi Peak to the west, Sohongdan to the south and Mt. Jung to the north. Kim Il Sung located the command post on a hill where machine-guns of the Guard Company and the 8th Regiment were arranged. Kim Jong Suk and other guerrillas lay in ambush beside Kim Il Sung.

At dawn, hundreds of heavily-armed Japanese troops and armed policemen, as Kim Il Sung had expected, were creeping close behind the 7th Regiment that had been returning from Singaechok, where it had struck a lumber station owned by a Japanese. As it was foggy, the 7th Regiment were not aware of the enemy on their heels, about 200 metres away. Kim Il Sung let the 7th Regiment pass the area of the ambush, and then, when the enemy troops were all within the area, ordered his men to open fire.

Kim Jong Suk had already experienced many battles, but this was the first battle, she fought in, in the homeland. When her cartridge belt ran out of bullets, Kim Jong Suk asked Jang Chol Gu beside her for her spare bullets, firing and firing. The few enemy survivors retreated, and joined their reinforcements.

Kim Il Sung commanded the battle from a projection of the hill where the machine-guns were emplaced. Kim Jong Suk never failed to deliver hits at the enemy attempting to raise their heads above the grassland, so ensuring the safety of the Commander. The machine-gunners mowed down the enemy mercilessly. Unable to make a frontal attack any more, the enemy made scarecrows with raincoats and helmets on the periphery of the forest, and left some snipers behind. The enemy's main force then rushed round northward in an attempt to strike the KPRA from the side and from the rear.

Foreseeing the enemy's scheme, Kim Il Sung ordered a unit to surround the enemy to counter their attempt. The battle resulted in several hundred enemy deaths.

The KPRA unit began to retreat towards the Tuman River. About 200 people who had followed the unit from Sinsadong helped the unit by carrying supplies, at the risk of their lives.

Kim Jong Suk was entrusted with the task of leading these people across the Tuman. When they arrived at a place near the Kapsan-Musan road, an unexpected situation cropped up-enemy troops slipped in between the main-force unit and the supply-carrier party. Kim Jong Suk cautioned her fellow women guerrillas not to commit any hasty action, as the enemy were still unaware of the situation, and placed them in ambush to strike all of a sudden, while sending the supply carriers under cover in the thick forest.

The KPRA's interception party that had been on stand-by near the road also joined in the strike, killing almost all the enemy, and forced an enemy military truck, that was filled with troops, to turn back.

The unit and the supply carriers crossed the Tuman safely, and camped near Changshanling, Antu County. That night, Kim Jong Suk treated the supply carriers to a meal, and arranged songs and dances for them. She also told them a story with regard to Commander Kim Il Sung's "art of shrinking distances,"[26] and about the military and political actions conducted by the KPRA.

Next morning, the helpers returned home across the Tuman River. Kim Jong Suk promised them to meet again on the road of struggle for Korea's liberation, and encouraged them to keep fighting without losing confidence in sure victory. It was reported later that as soon as they crossed the Tuman, they were rounded up by the policemen of the Nongsadong police substation and interrogated. They gave a full account of what they had seen and heard for two days, as instructed by Kim Jong Suk. Flabbergasted,

the enemy warned them not to tell other people what they had seen and heard.

Each time they met their relatives and friends, however, the workers talked about the battle on the Taehongdan tableland and the activities of the KPRA in the area northeast of Mt. Paektu. These stories later spread throughout the homeland, inspiring the people and the revolutionaries there to struggle more vigorouslyagainst the Japanese.

6. IN THE AREAS NORTHEAST OF MT. PAEKTU

THE NEW THEATRE OF WAR ON THE BANK OF THE TUMAN RIVER

The main-force unit of the KPRA left Changshanling, and marched in the direction of Damalugou. It reached Dagou, Antu County, where Kim Il Sung called, on May 24, 1939, a meeting of military and political cadres of the KPRA to put forward a policy of building another strong revolutionary bulwark in the areas northeast of Mt. Paektu through intensive military and political activities there. He divided the main-force unit of the KPRA into groups of regimental size, so that each could hold a certain area, striking the enemy here and there, and closely combining military actions with political activities. As a result, the Guard Company and the 8th Regiment left for Huifengdong via Yushidong, Helong County, the 7th Regiment advanced to the areas west of Hongqihe, and many different political operatives' teams went to the homeland.

One of the political operatives' teams included Ri Tong Gol, who had committed a grave error as a result of his involvement in Om Kwang Ho's counterrevolutionary activities at the Qingfeng Secret Camp. The day he was assigned by Kim Il Sung to the task of political work in the homeland, Ri came to meet Kim Jong Suk. She congratulated him from the bottom of her heart on the honour of having been entrusted with the task. In fact, when Ri had been demoted to a cook as punishment for his crime, it was none other than Kim Jong Suk who had shown concern for him more than anybody else. Subjected as she had been to harsh maltreatment at the Qingfeng Secret Camp, she never revealed her displeasure with him. On the contrary, she helped him a lot in the kitchen, by the camp-fire, or on the march, and often talked with him about the revolutionary attitude, obligation and comradeship. For this reason, she rejoiced over Ri's assignment to the new task as if it was her own honour, and said, "Let us work to translate the Commander's idea of national liberation into reality to the letter.

You need to think of the Commander each time you face challenges and find yourself in a helpless situation. Then, you'll feel re-energized and think of a way out. Let us together build a strong fortress of revolution on the bank of the Tuman River, true to the idea of the Commander."

Ri Tong Gol replied that he would certainly live up to the expectations of the Commander. Later, he made strenuous efforts to expand and strengthen the revolutionary organizations in the areas of Samjang and Yonsa, in spite of the strict surveillance and suppression of the enemy. In this process he happened to fall under an enemy encirclement. He lured the enemy single-handed to save the revolutionary organizations and their members, but was arrested himself. Even behind bars, he made no compromise with his revolutionary principles and died in Sodaemun prison, Seoul, in March 1945, along with Ri Je Sun and Kwon Yong Byok.

After the team led by Ri Tong Gol left for its destination, Kim Jong Suk, together with the 4th Company of the 7th Regiment, went to a new theatre of activity, an internment village in Dongjingping south of Hongqihe. Accompanied by a few other guerrillas, she called at the house of the village head located some distance from the west gate of the internment village. That night, the front room was occupied by members of the Self-Defence Corps that the village head had gathered to prevent them from hampering the activities of the revolutionary army. The hostess, who had no inkling of this, however, looked bewildered to see people in uniform in her house. Upon learning from the hostess that all the members of the Self-Defence Corps in the front room were born of poor farmers and that they had been forced by the Japanese to stand guard, toting wooden rifles, Kim Jong Suk decided to conduct political work among them. The occupants were all surprised to see a woman in uniform

before them at dead of night. After surveying the room, she told them: "Relax, please. We are the Korean People's Revolutionary Army led by General Kim Il Sung. I have come to talk with you."

The members of the Self-defence Corps, still wide-eyed, did not dare to move an inch.

"Both you and we are sons and daughters of the poor people," said Kim Jong Suk. "We believe that you have joined the Self-defence Corps not intentionally but under duress from the enemy."

Only then did their faces begin to light up.

Kim Jong Suk continued to dwell on their plight of having to undergo indescribable hardships, in an alien land, too, and urged them to discontinue their acts against their homeland and people.

The young members of the Self-Defence Corps were too ashamed to raise their heads. Then, one of them bravely rose up, and explained that they were all born into poor farm families, and they had been foolishly doing what the Japanese had cajoled them into doing. The others joined in, one after another, saying that they could no longer live as slaves of the Japanese, and that they would render support to the revolutionary army.

That night, the activities of the political operatives' team in the village of Dongjingping were conducted under the protection of the Self-Defence Corps men. When the team was about to leave the village, quite a few of them followed it, carrying aid goods on their backs. Later, they took an active part in the work to transform the village along revolutionary lines. The news about them spread to other Self-Defence Corps men in different villages, making a strong impact on them, thus throwing the structure and operation of the enemy's Self-Defence Corps units into great confusion.

After finishing her work in this village, Kim Jong Suk rallied the occupants of three farmhouses near Zhidong around the Anti-Japanese Association, a subordinate organization of the ARF, to

turn the farmhouses into the points of liaison with the homeland. As a result, these houses could serve as the base for the small units and teams of the KPRA to promote the work of building a secret point favourable for crossing the Tuman River.

This was the very channel through which Kim Il Sung entered the homeland at dead of night on June 17, 1939, to preside at a meeting at Kuksa Peak the following day.

The work of building a fortress of revolution in the northern areas of Korea, including Musan and Yonsa, was endangered by the arrest of Ri Tong Gol, who had been active in these areas. Kim Il Sung assigned to Kim Jong Suk the task of saving the situation in the area of Yonsa and establishing a regular system of organizational guidance for the revolutionary organizations in this area. Escorted by a team under the command of Commander Choe Il Hyon of the 4th Company, she immediately left for Yonsa in the homeland.

As soon as she arrived at her destination the following day and settled into the house of an organization member, she set about her political work. By that time the Yonsa chapter of the ARF had admitted only a few "reliable" people as its members out of its concern for possible exposure, with the result that it had not grown much from the time when an anti-Japanese youth association had been formed five years previously, or when the chapter itself was organized, and that its struggle was still at a passive stage.

Kim Jong Suk taught the owner of the house she was staying in, an organization member, that in view of the position of Yonsa as a sub-county seat, where Japanese ruling organs were situated, the chapter should conduct its activities to suit the relevant circumstances and conditions. She continued that the chapter must educate and win over to the anti-Japanese front all the people cherishing love for their country and nation, and an anti-Japanese feeling, be they owners of rice mills, shops or restaurants, or

clerks at the sub-county offices. She also explained the matter of forming branch organizations of the chapter, and the task of and ways for protecting the organizations from enemy suppression.

At the end of June, she formed the Yonsa Regional Committee of the ARF, entrusted with a mission of giving unified guidance to all the ARF organizations in the area. She then instructed the hard-core organization members to maintain only vertical relations with each other, instead of lateral ones, under the guidance of the regional committee, and actively take preventive measures for protecting the organizations from the danger of exposure while keeping a vigilant watch on the enemy's movements. Following the organization of the regional committee, she formed a Party organization in Yonsa with hard-core organization members.

When Kim Jong Suk and her team were leaving the Yonsa area, the ARF organizations in this area sent to the KPRA a variety of aid goods, including a sewing machine, which later played a leading role in the fulfillment of the task of making 600 uniforms.

The revolutionary organizations in Yonsa formed by Kim Jong Suk at that time served as a reliable cornerstone for developing the areas along the bank of the Tuman River and in northern Korea as a fortress of revolution.

As a result of Kim Jong Suk's energetic activities, a reliable channel was obtained through which Kim Il Sung could lead the 7th and 8th regiments and Guard Company through Musan and Yonsa in August that year. Prior to Kim Il Sung's advance into these areas, Kim Jong Suk accompanied a small unit of the 7th Regiment across the Tuman River to scout the enemy's movements and mount guards in and around the campsite to be used by Headquarters.

Having wound up her mission in the areas of Samjang and Yonsa, Kim Jong Suk returned to her unit on a march to Wudaoyangcha. When the marching column entered a forest in Wudaoyangcha, Kim Il Sung summoned Kim Jong Suk, and assigned to her the task of nursing Jang Chol Gu back to health. One of Jang's arms was paralyzed. On top of that, she was suffering from a high fever, sometimes lapsing into unconsciousness.

Casting his trustful eyes at this loyal follower who was always ready to take on any burdensome task, Kim Il Sung told her that the unit would certainly return to that place in one month. He also made sure that a straw-thatched hut was built for them, and that the remaining iron rations were given to them. Only then did he order the unit to resume its march. Anxious to assuage Kim Il Sung's pain of having had to leave his sickly women guerrillas behind in the depth of a wild forest, Kim Jong Suk bade him farewell with a beaming face. As soon as the marching column of the unit disappeared, leaving her alone behind, Kim Jong Suk suddenly felt empty in her heart, and found the forest eerie and sinister. At a time when the secret agents of the enemy were roaming everywhere in search of the whereabouts of the guerrilla army, Kim Jong Suk had to protect her fellow revolutionary comrade-in-arms from both illness and the enemy. She hung 29 mushrooms in the window, and said to Jang, now conscious: "The Commander promised to come back in a month. When these mushrooms have all been eaten he will come, won't he?"

She now had to act as a surgeon and at the same time a supply officer to take care of her comrade. She ranged through the dark forest, climbing slopes and precipitous rocks, to gather pine and fir resins, which she pasted over Jang's swollen arm and the backs

of her hands. She plucked wild fruits and medicinal herbs that could help reduce fever, boiled them overnight, and put spoonfuls of the boiled medicine into the mouth of the sick woman. Climbing up and down the steep mountain ranges under the hot rays of the sun all day long exhausted every ounce of her physical energy. Yet, when the sun set, she would sit up through the night beside the patient, applying a poultice or massaging Jang's arms and legs. In the forest, where sunlight could hardly penetrate and where old dead leaves were piling up layer by layer, even edible grass could not grow, compelling Kim Jong Suk to walk a long way to look for edible grass elsewhere.

Kim Jong Suk's devotion at long last conquered the patient's illness.

About a fortnight later, Kim Il Sung, accompanied by an orderly, unexpectedly called at the straw-thatched hut, carrying flour, bean oil, beef and other foodstuffs. He asked Jang about her treatment and exhorted her to continue it steadfastly, cherishing an iron will to recuperate as soon as possible so that she could re-join the unit and resume fighting the enemy, saying that a strong will was essential to her recuperation.

He then told Kim Jong Suk that a revolutionary could not be traded for anything and that the remaining fortnight was very important for the treatment of high fever. He said, "I am confident that you will save Jang without fail."

Following his visit, Jang's illness began to show signs of improvement. One day, a downpour started, and continued through the night, sweeping the roof of the hut away. The patient began to shiver, her illness hovering over the point of relapse, or worse.

Kim Jong Suk took off her jacket, and covered Jang with it and her own blanket. Yet, even the jacket and the blanket could not prevent the rain from soaking the patient. So Kim Jong Suk covered the patient with her body.

In later years, Jang recalled that night as follows: "The moment the lightning flashed across the sky, brightening the room, I could clearly see her head and body soaked to the very skin and the rain running in torrents down her face.

"Eyes glaring at the raging rainstorm in the night sky and her mouth moving in time to a song, she reminded me of an invincible fighter, as fierce as a tiger, engaged in a do-or-die battle with the enemy. Her noble image greatly moved me."

The long-awaited day came when the last 29th mushroom was to be removed. Both Jang Chol Gu, now back to health and in fine form, and Kim Jong Suk, tears flowing down their cheeks, greeted Kim Il Sung and other guerrillas on their visit to the thatched hut. That day, filled with the joy of having fulfilled her duty, Kim Jong Suk, accompanied by Jang, returned to her unit.

Kim Jong Suk was immediately given another task by Kim Il Sung, this time, of making 600 winter uniforms.

Kim Il Sung had elaborated a plan of launching large-unit circling operations in the wide areas northeast of Mt. Paektu to cope with the large-scale "punitive" drives of the enemy. Success in the operations to be staged in the severe cold depended in large measure on whether or not the task of making winter uniforms could be accomplished in time. It seemed almost impossible for the few members of the sewing unit with a small number of sewing machines to make such a large number of uniforms within one month.

What preoccupied Kim Jong Suk from the moment she received the task was the thought as to how she could manage to fulfil it as soon as possible.

When she arrived at the secret camp where the sewing unit was working, carrying a sewing machine and materials on her back, Kim Jong Suk told the women guerrillas who had arranged the working place and had been awaiting her:

"On my way here, I thought and thought of how we could manage to accomplish the task given by the Commander in about 20 days, that is, 10 days ahead of the set time."

The others stood aghast, tongue-tied.

Kim Jong Suk explained to them that on their task hung the success or failure of the winter operations, and called on them to do their best. The first person to rally to her call was Choe Hui Suk, the oldest member of the sewing unit. Choe, who had been acquainted with Kim Jong Suk from their days in the Fuyan guerrilla zone, knew well that Kim Jong Suk would by all means do whatever she decided to do. Choe, eight years older than Kim Jong Suk, highly respected the latter, whose struggle during the anti-"Minsaengdan" campaign, underground activities in Taoquanli and heroic feats in the course of her service in her unit under Kim Il Sung's personal command, were well known. Choe's support quickly won over all the other members of the sewing unit.

Choe, who was very experienced in material-cutting, volunteered to do the job of cutting, while Pak Jong Suk volunteered to do the tacking. Kim Jong Suk took the job of sewing, the main process of the task. From that time on, the working place was filled with the non-stop sound of Kim Jong Suk's sewing machine, until the task was accomplished. Kim Jong Suk worked even at night in the light of a pine torch. She took little rest in this period.

When her fellow guerrillas were fast asleep, she would get out of bed stealthily and light a pine torch to continue any unfinished work, without making sound. At dawn, she would cook breakfast for the unit.

As the work proceeded, however, the other members of the sewing unit began to be overwhelmed by fatigue. They would doze off while working, but were roused by the sonorous sound of

a song sung by Kim Jong Suk, a song ringing out like a bell all over the working place.

While singing, Kim Jong Suk recalled the images of her comrades-in-arms who had fallen at the secret camp in Ganbahezi, and remembered the slogans written by them with their blood, such as "Long live the Korean revolution!" The heavy clouds of fatigue and sleep disappeared, and the whole of the working place became infused with resolute determination to do even the work of the fallen comrades-in-arms.

In this way, the work of making 600 uniforms reached the last stage of completion in 20 days. At this time, however, the eye of the needle of the sewing machine, the only needle, wore out. The other members of the sewing unit proposed finishing the making of the remaining few suits by hand. Kim Jong Suk, however, disagreed, saying that their handiwork, however skilful it might be, would not match the products made by the sewing machine. She continued running the sewing machine, adjusting the needle with her left hand to prevent thread from slipping out of the eye. This work required her full concentration, with her eyes always riveted on her left hand. Choe Hui Suk stood by her to wipe the sweat from her face. At long last, the whole work was completed. All the members of the sewing unit, including Kim Jong Suk, hugged each other and shed tears of joy.

When they returned to the unit after finishing their job 10 days ahead of schedule, Kim Il Sung spoke highly of their service. And he assigned Kim Jong Suk another task.

At that time, Kim Il Sung had become very suspicious of his chief of staff Rim Su San, who had been dispatched to Dongpaizi for preparations for the large-unit circling operations. At a meeting held in Liangjiangkou in early October, Kim Il Sung had assigned all regiments and small units of the main-force unit the task of laying in enough food at the important points on the secret route of the unit's future movements. After the meeting, he had

dispatched Rim Su San to the secret camp at Dongpaizi on a mission to obtain food provisions. Some days after Rim left for his destination, however, a message arrived at Headquarters, reporting that he would have to drop in at another secret camp on his way to take some machine-guns from there. Reading the message, Kim Il Sung was immersed in thought for a long while, unable to understand why Rim would need machine-guns to obtain food. His thought raced back to Rim's past, when the latter had often revealed a tendency to defeatism and to his failure in his raid on a walled city in Liudaogou in the spring of the previous year because of his poor organization of the battle and his timidity. During the battle at Shuangshanzi, too, Rim had insisted on the withdrawal of the unit, exerting a bad influence on some of the guerrillas. He had been criticised on several occasions for his dislike of disciplined life and his occasional lies.

The message prompted Kim Il Sung to decide to send someone to the secret camp at Dongpaizi to get detailed, first-hand information about the state of affairs there. Who should be sent? As the man under suspicion was his chief of staff, this mission required keen eyes, working-class principles and uncompromising fighting spirit. Kim Il Sung thought that the right person for this duty was none other than Kim Jong Suk who, in the process of struggle over several years, had defied failure, frustration and overwhelming odds to carry out her missions. Thus, Kim Il Sung gave a special mission to Kim Jong Suk and sent her and his bodyguard Ri Tu Ik to the secret camp at Dongpaizi, which was more than 400 kilometres away, across the primeval forests of the Mengjiang highlands. The highlands of Mengjiang were already covered with an early fall of snow.

Kim Jong Suk and Ri Tu Ik, after a week-long forced march, arrived at the camp of Dongpaizi. To their surprise, they found that the camp was dilapidated and that Rim Su San was leading a depraved and corrupt life, instead of carrying out the tasks

assigned to him by Kim Il Sung. Far from promoting the work of forming revolutionary organizations among the local people, he did not take any measure whatsoever to establish contacts with the existing local revolutionary organizations, under the pretext of suspicious movements of the enemy. He had not built up a store of food for the members of his small unit for the winter, not to mention food for the large-unit circling operations. Kim Jong Suk immediately perceived Rim's ideological trend, which had led him to a depraved and corrupt life and defeatism. She could not remain as a mere onlooker, but proposed that the small unit start renovating the camp and build up a store of food for the coming winter. Then, food had to be stored for the large-unit circling operations.

Rim Su San agreed to the renovation of the camp, though reluctantly. Yet, he never turned up at the building site. To make matters worse, the members of the small unit who had long been short of food, became sick one by one as the cold weather arrived.

Despite all these difficulties, Kim Jong Suk managed to finish the project of renovating the camp through painstaking efforts. She then demanded that Rim Su San take immediate measures to keep close relations with the local revolutionary organizations and obtain food from them. Rim, however, was reluctant to comply with her demand, on the excuse that the situation was as unfavourable as ever and that the enemy's movements were suspicious. Indignant as they were at Rim's unreasonable behaviour, the soldiers in the camp did not dare to confront him.

Kim Jong Suk, however, found a second Om Kwang Ho in Rim Su San.

Scarcely suppressing her surging indignation, Kim Jong Suk said to Rim: "I think if we merely idle away our time, sitting with arms folded and worrying about the situation, alarmed at the enemy's tight surveillance and frantic 'punitive' operations, we are

doomed. There is nothing impossible if you trust the strength and wisdom of the guerrillas, and utilize them properly."

Rim prevaricated, saying that he was obtaining food through a certain channel and that they had better wait a little longer. As he was dead set against positive actions by the small unit, Kim Jong Suk became convinced that his attitude was not simply an outcome of his cowardice but an expression of his intention to ignore Kim Il Sung's orders and instructions, and of his total loss of confidence in the victory of the revolution. Kim Jong Suk thought it urgent to inform Kim Il Sung of the situation.

Next morning, she reported to Rim that, as she had finished her work in the camp, she would return to Headquarters. Then she called Ri Tu Ik, and proposed leaving the camp soon. But Ri was reluctant to agree, as he was worried about Kim Jong Suk's health. She was in fact not well enough to embark on a march. Ri Tu Ik proposed medical treatment for her prior to the march, but Kim Jong Suk told him: "It's not time to talk of someone's discomfort or illness; we must either crawl or roll our way to inform the Commander of the current situation in this place."

That night, both of them left the camp. From the outset, she had to push her body through snow while fighting against illness and fatigue. It became colder and the wind blew harder as time went by. Every step was beset with the danger of encountering the enemy's "punitive" troops. Physically and mentally racked by a constant high fever, Kim Jong Suk finally fell down, unconscious. Young Ri Tu Ik called her name time and again in a tearful voice, and she finally recovered consciousness. Gathering superhuman strength, she said:

"We must get to Headquarters come what may. We have no right even to die before reporting the situation to the Commander."

At long last, both she and Ri managed to cover the whole distance from Dongpaizi, Mengjiang County, through hundreds of

miles of thick forests and snow drifts, to Headquarters, and reported to Kim Il Sung in detail the actual situation at the camp.

Several months later, after Kim Jong Suk left Dongpaizi, Rim Su San surrendered to the Japanese, and guided "punitive" troops to the camp where Headquarters was situated.

DURING THE LARGE-UNIT CIRCLING OPERATIONS

Having arrived at Headquarters from Dongpaizi, Kim Jong Suk took part in the large-unit circling operations of the main unit of the KPRA under the personal command of Kim Il Sung.

At the meeting of the military and political cadres of the KPRA held at Liangjiangkou, Antu County, in October 1939, Kim Il Sung set forth the policy of large-unit circling operations. The operations were to be conducted by moving around in a vast area via designated secret routes and appearing suddenly in the places where the enemy least expected to be attacked, and vanishing quickly, unlike in the previous operations conducted in limited areas by relying on the secret camps.

The Japanese imperialists had come to the conclusion that they would not emerge victorious either in their war against China or in their operations against the Soviet Union unless they annihilated the KPRA units. So they set up the "Nozoe Punitive Command" in Jilin under the direct supervision of the Headquarters of the Kwantung Army. They then launched a vicious "punitive" offensive, called a "special clean-up campaign for maintaining public peace in the southeastern areas"[27] by mobilizing as many as 200,000 troops. The campaign was aimed at "annihilating" the KPRA by the end of 1939. To cope with this situation, Kim Il Sung organized new-type operations, the large-unit circling operations.

In the days of these operations, Kim Jong Suk encouraged and led the guerrillas, always in the van of the marching column.

When the unit was marching in Dunhua, the soldiers ran out of even the parched-rice flour kept for emergency use. Having had only water for meals for several days, they even had to go round fallen trees, as they had no strength to climb them.

Kim Jong Suk never showed any signs of fatigue, helping the young guerrillas and carrying the knapsacks of old guerrillas.

In the marching column there was a young guerrilla who had seriously burned himself when he had been receiving treatment from fever. She asked him to march together with her and tell her without hesitation if he was tired or in pain, regarding her as his own sister. She took care of him, so that his wound did not become worse and sometimes carried his accoutrements on her back.

When camping, she used to patch up the clothes of young guerrillas all night as quietly as possible so as not to disturb them in their sleep. One night, she found a young guerrilla sleeping with his worn-out shoes on. She took the shoes off his feet carefully and mended them, fighting fatigue. When the guerrillas woke up, he found her dozing against the tent pole with his mended shoes on her lap.

In mid-December, the unit reached Liukesong, Dunhua County. There was a large lumber mill the Japanese imperialists had built there hurriedly for the provision of timber for the war effort. Six hundred people were forced to work there. About 70 forest rangers were stationed there, with three rings of barbed wire entanglements and a wooden fence around their barracks, and an underground passage from the barracks to a fort on a nearby mountain.

Kim Il Sung decided to fight a battle to wipe out the enemy at the lumber mill. This battle, called the assault to the lumber mill

in Liukesong, was aimed at throwing the enemy "punitive" force concentrated in Helong and Antu into confusion.

On the night of December 17, the battle began. The soldiers of the KPRA occupied the fort and barracks, while the enemy soldiers hid themselves in the passage dug under the barracks. The KPRA men started a fire with cotton to smoke them out. Just as victory was in sight, Regimental Commander O Jung Hup was fatally wounded. Thereupon, Kim Jong Suk charged into the passage, shouting "Comrades! Let's take revenge for the regimental commander! Thousands of deaths to the enemy!" The enemy soldiers in the underground passage were annihilated.

Before breathing his last, O Jung Hup said to his men that it was regrettable to die without carrying out the order given by Kim Il Sung, and asked them to convey to Kim Il Sung his own wish for his good health.

Among those killed in the battle were Commander of the 4th Company Choe Il Hyon and Kang Hong Sok, a machine-gun platoon leader. They had both frequently accompanied Kim Jong Suk whenever she had been dispatched to the Yonsa area.

Carrying the fallen on stretchers, the unit marched towards Xibeicha.

At dawn the next day, a memorial ceremony was held in a forest.

Kim Il Sung gave a memorial address. His voice grew hoarse. Even after the address, he stood still.

Kim Jong Suk gave a pouch of earth, which she had found in O Jung Hup's knapsack, to Kim Il Sung, saying, "This is earth from the homeland Comrade O Jung Hup carried with him."

Amid a rifle salute, Kim Il Sung spread one half of the earth over the coffin. Commanders and soldiers, including Kim Jong Suk, also spread on it the earth of the homeland they had kept with care in their knapsacks.

Returning the other half to Kim Jong Suk, Kim Il Sung said, "Let's spread this portion over the homeland as O Jung Hup wished when it is liberated."

Resolved to take revenge on the enemy a thousand fold, the unit marched towards Jiaxinzi.

The assault on the lumber mill in Jiaxinzi was soon over. Having heard the terrible news that the forest rangers in Liukesong who had offered resistance had all been killed, the forest rangers in Jiaxinzi did not dare to offer any resistance, and surrendered in their barracks.

Inspired by the strength of the KPRA, 300 local workers volunteered to carry sacks of grain for the army, and 100 of them joined the army. The recruits from Liukesong and Jiaxinzi numbered over 200.

Kim Jong Suk, who felt more grieved than anyone else at the deaths of the revolutionary comrades, determined to bring the recruits up to be revolutionary soldiers faithful to Kim Il Sung, like those who had died in the Liukesong battle.

When the unit reached the bank of the Songhua three days after leaving Jiaxinzi, Kim Il Sung ordered the unit to prepare to camp and hold an entertainment for the recruits to mark the New Year's Day.

A stage was built of wood, a red flag was unfurled on the backdrop and the programme details were written up in large letters. Several bonfires were lit around the stage and the spectators' seats. The recruits were surprised to see clearly the stage with a red flag on the backdrop against a dark forest.

As Kim Il Sung took his seat, the curtain was opened at the blowing of a whistle, and over 100 guerrillas sang in chorus The Revolutionary Song. Kim Jong Suk conducted the chorus. The sonorous and cheerful chorus greatly impressed the recruits. The chorus was followed by a dance, solo song, harmonica solo and other colourful items. A skit showing the life of the guerrillas was

also put on the stage. Kim Jong Suk sang Song of the Anti-Japanese War. Listening to her song, the recruits pictured in their minds their homeland drowned in a sea of blood, and hardened their resolve to fight the enemy.

The entertainment proved an occasion for instilling in the hearts of the recruits the pride of being soldiers of the KPRA commanded by Kim Il Sung, and for changing the atmosphere in the unit where an oppressive silence had reigned owing to the deaths of some comrades.

After the battles at Liukesong and Jiaxinzi, Kim Il Sung organized military and political training for about 40 days at the secret camp in Baishitan in Fusong County, in consideration of the enlargement of the unit.

Some veteran guerrillas, to say nothing of the recruits, felt relaxed as they were studying in the warm secret camp when the enemy were shivering in the snow trudging through the backwoods of Dunhua all through the winter.

However, Kim Jong Suk regarded the training as a continuation of the large-unit circling operations, and a continuation of arduous marches and battles.

She was never absent from study sessions as a member of the study group of the machine-gun squad under the Guard Company, even though she was busy preparing meals for Headquarters and with doing sentry duty. In seminars, she explained the strategic and tactical problems of the Korean revolution in combination with the immediate tasks of the KPRA and the aim of the large-unit circling operations, quoting passages from Kim Il Sung's works and remarks, thus helping others fully understand the essence of the revolutionary idea of Kim Il Sung.

She also helped the recruits with their study. Almost all of them were illiterate or only knew the Korean alphabet. They were ignorant of the elementary political terminology and military

terms of the guerrillas. Some of them were hesitant about learning to write, thinking it something very difficult.

Kim Jong Suk told them how the veterans had learned the alphabet and acquired the truth of the revolution under the guidance of Kim Il Sung. She personally took charge of some of them to teach them.

At first she taught them such short words as "revolution", "Korea" and "liberation"; then she ensured that they learned by heart such slogans as "Let us realize a broad anti-Japanese united front through the general mobilization of the Korean nation!" and "Let us overthrow the brigandish Japanese imperialist rule and establish a genuine government of the Korean people!" She got them to write these slogans and short sentences on their own. For those who had not even been to the night school, she used the method of singing Song of the Ten-Point Programme of the ARF and other revolutionary songs. When they reached a certain level of development, she led them to write compositions under the titles, *Why did I join the guerrilla unit of General Kim Il Sung?* and *The day when I first met General Kim Il Sung*. This helped them fully understand how they should live and fight to become revolutionary soldiers faithful to Kim Il Sung.

The recruits found learning military knowledge and drilling as challenging as learning to write. It was very difficult for people, who had used only axes or saws, to feel at home with the structure of weapons like rifles and machine guns and the ways of their operation, assembly, disassembly and repair.

Participating with them in military study and drill, Kim Jong Suk showed them the method of assembly and disassembly of weapons, and gave them file training, and firing and tactical drilling, encouraging them to redouble their efforts in military training.

When the first stage of military training was finished, Kim Il Sung raised an emergency alarm to test the overall combat preparedness of the unit, especially the preparedness of the recruits.

The recruits, to say nothing of the veterans, moved swiftly and exactly to occupy their battle positions.

Kim Il Sung was greatly satisfied. "The recruits have been trained perfectly in less than one month. It is a great success. We can advance towards the homeland immediately now," he said.

Reviewing the first stage of the intensive military and political training, he presented Kim Jong Suk with a fountain pen as a commendation for her excellence in the training, and for being an example in helping the recruits in their training.

When ten days had passed after the second stage of military and political training had started, the unit had to leave the secret camp at Baishitan, for the enemy, who had been wandering about the forests and valleys in the region northeast of Mt. Paektu and the forests of Dunhua, had discovered the whereabouts of the unit. The enemy units kept contact with each other by wireless installed on the mountain peaks. They even scattered leaflets, reading, "You are the only ones left. Don't make reckless resistance. Surrender to us." The leaflets were scattered in various places. They even fell on the marching column.

Fully prepared through the military and political training, the KPRA soldiers marched along the routes of the large-unit circling operations, flying the red flag.

On March 11, 1940, the main-force unit of the KPRA attacked Damalugou, a place of military importance to the enemy, and swiftly annihilated the enemy soldiers there. The news of the victorious battle at Damalugou plunged the enemy, who was concentrated in the border area of Musan, into confusion. Meanwhile, it delighted the people, who had been deceived by the enemy's false propaganda that the guerrillas had all frozen to death in the backwoods of Dunhua.

When the unit was withdrawing from Damalugou, 300 workers volunteered to carry trophies.

Walking with them, Kim Jong Suk said:

"You must have taken the Japanese propaganda that 'the guerrillas have all frozen to death in the mountains' to be true before you met us. But, as you see, we attacked the enemy in Damalugou opposite the homeland. It is only General Kim Il Sung who will save you from poverty. So, giving moral and material support to the guerrillas is a shortcut to your return home, where your parents, wives and children are awaiting you."

The workers who returned to Damalugou later told with relish stories about Kim Il Sung and his KPRA and their impressions of the women guerrillas.

A Japanese publication of that time, under the title, Armed women guerrillas involved, the whole aspect of Kim Il Sung's unit has become clear, reported, "According to some people among those 140 people who returned after carrying trophies for the guerrilla unit led by Commander Kim Il Sung from Damalugou, on the shore opposite North Hamgyong Province, at dawn on the 12th, the guerrillas numbered about 150 including seven or eight women."

Among the women guerrillas, the presence of whom even the enemy publication, accustomed to one-sided reporting, could not hide from the public in view of the stark reality, was Kim Jong Suk.

The name of Kim Jong Suk, who was fighting in the face of all hardships for the restoration of the homeland and the freedom and liberation of the people, became known more widely among the Korean and Chinese peoples in the area northeast of Mt. Paektu and the northern area of Korea, and even the enemy expressed wonder at her.

Kim Il Sung always stood in the forefront both in underground activities and on battlefields during the whole period of the anti-Japanese revolutionary struggle. To protect him was of particular importance for the Korean revolutionaries.

Kim Jong Suk guarded Kim Il Sung at numerous critical moments, herself becoming a shield and a human bullet.

It was on March 25, 1940.

Calculating that it was difficult to advance towards Musan, Korea, with the enemy troops following from Damalugou on the heels of the KPRA unit, Kim Il Sung decided to wipe them out that day in the Hongqihe valley.

The enemy soldiers belonged to the Maeda unit, which prided itself on being an "ever-victorious unit" and "experts at punitive operations". How heinous they were could be seen from the fact that they had pulled out and thrown the percussion locks from their guns and smashed their watches on rocks when they were dying in battles.

The battle in the valley was fierce from the start. While the guerrillas were mowing down the enemy soldiers in ambush, a group of the enemy soldiers, detaching themselves from the main force, began to steal up to Headquarters, situated on the ridge of the eastern height.

Discovering this while safeguarding Headquarters, Kim Jong Suk fired at them and ran in the opposite direction. Reaching a place far off from Headquarters, she took careful aim and shot the enemy soldiers down.

Alarmed at the unusual gun reports from the ridge at the back of Headquarters, the guerrillas ran there only to find that the gunshots had died down. They looked around to find out what had happened, and saw Kim Jong Suk climbing up towards them. "Don't worry. Comrade Commander is safe," she said.

There were two bullet holes in the basin hanging from her knapsack. The enemy bullets had pierced it when she had been running, luring them. Looking at the bullet holes, the guerrillas pictured in their minds the hair-raising moment, but she only felt relieved to think that Kim Il Sung was safe. (The basin is now on display in the Korean Revolution Museum.)

After the battle at Hongqihe, Kim Jong Suk accompanied the 8th Regiment to the Musan area in the homeland, and conducted brisk military and political activities, further bolstering the anti-Japanese fighting spirit of the people, who had been beside themselves with joy at the news of the victorious large-unit circling operations of the KPRA.

Having suffered a telling blow at the battle of Hongqihe, the enemy made even more frantic efforts to wipe out the main unit of the KPRA. The enemy's "punitive" force was concentrated in the valley of Hualazi, Antu County.

To cope with this situation, in Hualazi, in April 1940, Kim Il Sung reviewed the victorious large-unit circling operations, and set forth the policy of launching dispersed activities briskly and attacking the enemy at various places.

Accordingly, the units of the KPRA went over to dispersed activities from the end of April.

During these days, too, Kim Jong Suk regarded defending Headquarters as the first and foremost task which concerned the destiny of the Korean revolution, and defended Kim Il Sung, herself becoming a shield.

At the end of June 1940, the unit led by Kim Il Sung marched towards Xiaohaerbaling. One day, the unit was just about to cross a river at Dashahe in Antu County, when the pursuing enemy suddenly began to fire at it from a height. Sensing that the unit was led by Kim Il Sung, they grew frantic. They were from the "new army" in Antu County. Its commander was the elder brother of the notorious Ri To Son, who had been killed in battle at

Jinchang, Antu County, three years before by the KPRA unit commanded by Choe Hyon27. Resolved to remain faithful to Japanese imperialism, he had been eager to avenge his younger brother. The overwhelming majority of the "new army" were the sons and relatives of men killed by the KPRA.

The unit was in a very critical situation. Some of the guerrillas had already begun to cross the river, and some were preparing to cross it. The open area of the river was a death trap.

Instantly analyzing the features of the terrain, Kim Il Sung ordered the unit to a charge the height. With a bugle sounding the charge from the valley, the guerrillas rushed towards the mountain ridge. Facing the surging charge of the KPRA soldiers roaring their battle cries, the enemy was thrown into consternation. Now the odds were against the enemy. But, the well-trained enemy soldiers soon came to their senses, and made a counterattack. The battle grew fierce.

Kim Il Sung commanded the battle from a rock on the ridge of the mountain. Mindful of his safety, Kim Jong Suk kept a close watch on the surroundings. Noticing reeds swaying strangely, she turned her eyes and saw half a dozen enemy soldiers hiding in a reed field, taking aim at Kim Il Sung on the ridge.

During the long bloody anti-Japanese armed struggle, Kim Il Sung had faced a critical situation more than once, but not a life-or-death situation like this one.

At the hair-raising moment, Kim Jong Suk raced to Kim Il Sung, shouting "Comrade Commander!" and shielding him with her body. Then she pulled the trigger of her Mauser. The enemy soldier in the front fell down, dropping his gun. A gunshot followed: Kim Il Sung had shot over her shoulder. Kim Jong Suk fired again. In this way they both shot all the enemy soldiers in the reed field dead.

Looking up to Kim Il Sung commanding the battle from the rock, Kim Jong Suk shed tears, the tears welling up from the

feeling that danger to Kim Il Sung had passed, and that he was safe.

Her boundless loyalty to Kim Il Sung proved vital to ensuring his personal safety, and to the victorious advance of the Korean revolution.

7. THE CONVICTION OF VICTORY

IN THE WAKE OF THE XIAOHAERBALING CONFERENCE

The Japanese imperialists, even before concluding their war against China, expanded the theatre of war to Southeast Asia, in order to realize their ambition of creating a "Greater East Asia Co-prosperity Sphere"[28]. In the meantime, for the "security of the home front", they launched a large-scale "punitive" offensive to "finally annihilate" the KPRA by mobilizing a 200,000-strong elite force, at the same time resorting to unprecedented political oppression and economic plunder of the Korean people.

Externally, the flames of the Second World War were spreading all over the world.

In this grim situation, Kim Il Sung cherished an optimistic view of the chances for the restoration of the country, and set forth the strategic policy of taking the initiative to greet the momentous occasion.

The Xiaohaerbaling conference of military and political cadres of the KPRA was held on August 10th and 11th, 1940. At the meeting, Kim Il Sung defined a new strategic task of switching over from large-unit operations to small-unit actions, so as to preserve and accumulate the forces of the KPRA, the backbone of the Korean revolution, train its officers and men to be able political and military cadres, prepare the Korean people politically and ideologically, and make preparations for all-people resistance,

for taking the initiative to greet the great event of national liberation.

After the conference, the KPRA was reorganized into small units and groups, and units for military and political training.

In the period of small-unit actions, Kim Jong Suk took part in the battles fought at Huanghuadianzi, Antu County, and at Facaitun, Yanji County, under the command of Kim Il Sung. Wherever she went, she conducted brisk political activities among the people, inspiring them to join the sacred war for the country's liberation.

In September that year, accompanying Kim Il Sung, Kim Jong Suk went to the secret camp on Mt. Kanbaek. The camp was built on the plateau between the main peak of Mt. Paektu and Mt. Kanbaek.

Having fully acquainted himself with the activities of the small units and groups, Kim Il Sung called a meeting of their leaders. Kim Jong Suk attended the meeting.

At the meeting, Kim Il Sung gave the leaders detailed tasks for training the members of the small units and groups to be efficient military and political cadres, building temporary secret bases in the favourable mountainous areas in northern Korea, on which they could rely during their activities, finding their way into the major industrial areas, rural villages and fishermen's villages to bring the people there to the consciousness of the revolution and organize them, and for organizing various forms of anti-Japanese struggle. He regrouped some small units and defined the areas of their operation.

Panic-stricken in those days by the successful activities of the small units and groups of the KPRA, the Japanese imperialists made frantic efforts to track down the Headquarters of the KPRA. Their "punitive" forces, secret agents and traitors to the revolution prowled the mountains and valleys.

In this situation, Kim Jong Suk set the foremost task of the small unit led by Kim Il Sung to be that of ensuring his personal safety.

Kim Jong Suk had already stressed at a Party cell meeting of her small unit immediately after the Xiaohaerbaling conference that the first and foremost task of the Headquarters bodyguards was to ensure the personal safety of Kim Il Sung, and that this meant the liberation of the country and the bright future of the revolution.

In the small unit led by Kim Il Sung, she was a point woman and a sentry for the safety of Kim Il Sung: When marching, she would be at the head of the column scouting the way ahead; when camping, she would walk round the camp site all night, ensuring the safety of Headquarters.

In October 1940, the small unit was based at Huanggouling, Antu County. At dawn one day, Kim Il Sung ordered the unit to quickly make preparations for moving, as the enemy seemed to have sensed the whereabouts of Headquarters.

When the members of the small unit had nearly finished their breakfast, assistant machine-gunner Ri Ul Sol, who had to be on sentry duty, entered the tent. He said that Kim Il Sung had ordered him to have breakfast relieving him on sentry duty.

No sooner had he said this than Kim Jong Suk quickly left the tent. At the same moment, she heard Kim Il Sung shout, "Who is there?" and a Mauser shot ringing from the direction of the sentry post. Machine-gun fire followed.

Kim Jong Suk rushed towards the sentry post, oblivious of the rain of machine-gun bullets.

Kim Il Sung was now firing his Mauser from behind a fallen tree.

Kim Jong Suk shot the enemy machine-gunner to death, covering Kim Il Sung with her body as she did so.

"Comrade Commander! It is dangerous here. You must leave here."

It was really a hair-raising moment.

After sending Ri Ul Sol to the tent, Kim Il Sung had been planning the future operation. He heard a dry tree branch breaking, a common enough sound in a forest, but, Kim Il Sung, long experienced in battle, had sensed that enemy soldiers were nearby. Taking cover behind fallen tree, Kim Il Sung had fired towards the direction of the sound. At the same time, the enemy machine-gun started firing. Many enemy soldiers had surrounded the camp under the cover of the morning mist. They had been tightening the encirclement and placing the machine-gun for firing when one of them had trodden on a dry branch.

Kim Il Sung ordered his machine-gunner and some soldiers to hold off the enemy and the rest to occupy the back hill, a favourable position.

Kim Jong Suk shouted, "Comrades! Please climb up the hill quickly with Comrade Commander." She herself remained with the machine-gunner. The enemy's attack was a desperate one, as they were resolved to destroy the Headquarters of the Korean revolution.

Kim Jong Suk took over the machine-gun. Under the rain of bullets, the enemy soldiers did not dare to raise their heads.

The small-unit soldiers who had chopped their way through wild grapevines with swords, occupied their positions on the hill, and opened fire at the enemy, routing them.

The enemy soldiers belonged to a "special unit" guided by Rim Su San, who had surrendered to the Japanese imperialists. On discovering this fact when they were searching the battlefield later, the members of the small unit shuddered with indignation. They had never dreamed that the man who had once been the chief of staff of a KPRA division, would become such a faithful lackey of the Japanese imperialists.

Kim Jong Suk knew him well. When she had been the CC instructor in Cangcaicun, he had been the political instructor of a guerrilla company there.

Kim Jong Suk said to the small-unit members: "If a revolutionary loses his conscience, he will be degenerate. What is vital for a revolutionary is a revolutionary conscience, and his most important weapon is the conviction of the victory of the revolution. When he loses his conscience and conviction, he will end up abandoning the revolution and turning into a traitor, leveling his gun at his former comrades. Rim Su Sun's example testifies to this."

Later, Rim Su San, abandoned by the Japanese imperialists, became a liquor peddler. Even after the country's liberation, he was not aware of the defeat of the Japanese imperialists. He was arrested by Ryu Kyong Su and his men who were rounding up stragglers from the Japanese army in the Pochon area.

In the small unit, Kim Jong Suk took good care of the other guerrillas, cooking meals and nursing the sick and wounded.

When the task of making winter uniforms for the small-unit soldiers was raised, she made the uniforms at night by the camp fire. Worried about her health, Jon Mun Sop offered to help her. But, pointing out that Jon had no experience even in simple needlework, she turned down his offer, and finished the task all alone.

Around this time Kim Il Sung lost touch with the small unit led by O Paek Ryong, owing to the death of the messenger. Kim Il Sung was quite concerned about the unit: He would say several times a day that he wondered if they were adequately dressed and in good health. He would even go to the entrance to the camp at midnight or early in the morning to await their arrival.

Recalling the names of the members of O Paek Ryong's small unit, their height and physique, Kim Jong Suk made a padded coat for each of them. She also made tobacco pouches embroidered

with the words Victory of the Revolution and National Liberation, and put them in the pockets of the coat.

Kim Il Sung was very satisfied with this work of hers, saying, "Kim Jong Suk has done a good job. How delighted they will be when they get these padded coats after experiencing so many difficulties in the enemy-held areas! They might then forget the days when they shivered from cold and hunger in the open."

The small unit led by Kim Il Sung had to leave immediately for the Soviet-Manchurian border area, as Kim Il Sung was to attend a conference to be held at Khabarovsk to discuss joint operations between the KPRA, the Northeast Anti-Japanese Allied Army (NAJAA) and the Soviet Far East Forces.

However, O Paek Ryong's small unit failed to appear by the date of departure.

Before departure, Kim Jong Suk, with other guerrillas, dug up the site of the camp fire, covered the bottom with dead branches, and buried the winter uniforms together with two sacks of rice, ensuring that they were kept dry.

Reaching the place later, O Paek Ryong and his men unearthed the uniforms and rice. They found the tobacco pouches in the pockets of the padded coats, and exclaimed, "Kim Jong Suk did this for us."

When the small unit led by Kim Il Sung reached Hunchun after conducting military and political activities in Baicaogou and Hamatang, Wangqing County, it was already early winter.

One day, the guerrillas, exhausted from continual battles and marches, fell fast asleep by the camp fire as soon as they were ordered to be billeted.

In the meantime, Kim Jong Suk went down to a valley to wash Kim Il Sung's clothes in a stream covered with thin ice. When she finished her washing, frost had formed on the hair sticking out of her cap and on her eyebrows, and her lips had turned pale.

When she was drying the wet clothes by the camp fire, an enemy movement was reported. The alarm was raised, and the unit was ordered to march. Kim Jong Suk put the wet clothes under her jacket, and followed the marching column.

At the next camp site Kim Jong Suk folded the dried clothes, and went to Kim Il Sung. Seeing her enter the tent, her face so pale from the cold, he grew angry.

"Who ordered you to do it?"

Kim Jong Suk said nothing.

"I respect your devotion to me," he said in a low voice. "I am always grateful to you for it. But why on earth did you do this? What if you catch pneumonia? If I bask in your self-sacrificing devotion, do you think I will feel at ease?"

Later, he recollected as follows:

"I was near tears when I saw her face so pale from the cold. To think that she had done for me what my mother dared not do in her lifetime, I did not know what to say to her. The devotion with which Kim Jong Suk undertook of her own accord the thing even my mother had not done, at great sacrifice to herself! I thought it must have been her warm feeling towards Kim Il Sung the man, as well as her revolutionary devotion to her Commander."

Kim Il Sung left the tent, unable to say any more. Snow was falling in large flakes.

Walking slowly through the snow, he recollected the battle at Shuangshanzi two years previously.

The battle was so fierce that he himself took a machine-gun on the firing line and mowed down the enemy. He did not have even a chance to take a meal. Then he felt something warm at his side. He felt in his pocket, and found dumplings in it. Glancing round, he could see Kim Jong Suk running about the battlefield, putting dumplings in the hands of the fighters.

When he was commanding another battle, he felt someone putting something in his pocket. He turned to find that it was

Kim Jong Suk. In his pocket, there were cracked pine nuts wrapped in paper. After the battle, he asked her where she had got them, but she only smiled.

Kim Il Sung often recollected the padded coat she had made for him. Apparently, she had heard somewhere that floss-silk was bullet-proof. So she gathered floss whenever it was available, and made a padded coat for him. When it turned out that the coat she had made, stitch after stitch with the utmost care, sitting up late for several nights, fitted him perfectly, she was overjoyed.

Kim Jong Suk knitted woolen stockings and waistbands whenever she had time. As she knitted them for him every winter, Kim Il Sung once asked her where and how she obtained knitting wool. She only smiled. He asked her again if she had woolen stockings of her own. Again, she did not answer. When he pressed her for an answer, she only said, "You are engaged in a great work, General, and you needn't worry your head about such trivial things."

GREETING THE SPRING IN A FOREIGN LAND

Early in January 1941, a conference was called in Khabarovsk, in the name of the Comintern. The representatives of the KPRA, the NAJAA and the Soviet Far East Forces attended the conference.

The central issue discussed at the conference was the orientation of the future activities of the NAJAA and the KPRA. The discussion was concluded with the decision to put emphasis on small-unit actions, work with the masses and fostering the strength of the Korean and Chinese armed units.

This coincided with the policy Kim Il Sung had set forth at the Xiaohaerbaling conference. The units also agreed to wage small-unit actions in the whole area of Korea and Manchuria by relying on the training bases in the territory of the Soviet Union.

After the conference, two bases-one called Camp South, and the other, Camp North-were established in the Soviet Far East region. Some of the KPRA forces occupied Camp South.

Kim Il Sung took measures to form small units and dispatch them to Korea and Manchuria, and expressed his resolve to leave in command of a small unit to conduct political and military activities in the area northeast of Mt. Paektu and in Korea. He assigned to Kim Jong Suk the task of going to the Paektusan Secret Camp to convey the intentions of Headquarters to the small units and groups active in various places throughout Korea and in the Changbai area, while working in the secret camps around Mt. Paektu and supervising the operations of the small units and groups from the KPRA and the revolutionary organizations.

Commanding personnel expressed apprehension when the issue of dispatching Kim Jong Suk to the areas around Mt. Paektu was first raised. With the aim of igniting war against the Soviet Union, from early autumn of the previous year (1940) the Japanese imperialists intensified their fascist oppression and plunder of the Korean people, while continuing offensives against the KPRA. In this situation, it was not easy to guide the activities of the small units and groups dispersed in various places. In addition, it was a serious problem that Kim Jong Suk, who had to assist Kim Il Sung with his work near him in this complex situation, was to be away from him for a long time.

Reading their minds, Kim Il Sung thought deeply, and finally said that she was the very person for the task because she was well acquainted with the situation there and had experience in underground work. He then told her to make preparations for departure.

Following his instructions, Kim Jong Suk made her own preparations, and at the same time helped those who were to leave with Kim Il Sung for small-unit actions, in their preparations. One day, some of the guerrillas called on Kim Il Sung and suggested having photos taken. They wanted to leave photos as souvenirs as there was no knowing when they would meet again. A man with a camera added that all that Kim Il Sung needed to do was to pose. Commanding officers Choe Hyon and An Kil[29] were also waiting for him outside.

Kim Il Sung went outside, saying, "If that is your wish, let's have our photos taken. It's a fine day for taking pictures."

Leaning on a birch tree on which spring tints were emerging, he posed with the commanding officers as well as with other guerrillas. One of them suggested to him that he should have a photo taken with Kim Jong Suk. Hearing this, Kim Jong Suk grew shy, and hid behind the backs of the women guerrillas. They pushed her forward to his side. In order not to miss the moment, the "cameraman" clicked the shutter. For Kim Jong Suk, it was as good as a wedding photo. After announcing their marriage on their way to the training base in late autumn the previous year, Kim Il Sung and Kim Jong Suk were so busy that they had not had much time to meet each other. Only on that day, did they have the chance to pose for a souvenir photo with the blessing of their comrades. Kim Il Sung wanted to remember that spring forever, so he jotted down on the back of the photo: "Greeting the spring in a foreign land, March 1, 1941."

Originally, Kim Il Sung and Kim Jong Suk had no intention of marrying before achieving the cause of national liberation. Other guerrillas were of the same opinion. However, Kim Il Sung and Kim Jong Suk changed their minds, because it seemed that the restoration of the country could not be achieved within only a few years, and the revolution was likely to take generations; and growing old was something they could not postpone.

The spring they greeted in a foreign land was without doubt the most unforgettable spring of their lives.

They did not know how many springs they had to greet in an alien land on the rough and long revolutionary road. In order to hasten the spring which they would greet in the liberated homeland, they had to make an expedition into the homeland again.

Some days later, Kim Il Sung left the training base on an expedition with a small unit after ordering Kim Jong Suk to acquaint herself with the activities of the teams of political workers and the revolutionary organizations in the areas along the Amnok River and then arrive at the temporary secret camp in Jiapigou, Wangqing County, by mid-May 1941.

Before his departure, Kim Jong Suk cut her hair to make liners for his shoes wishing him good health on his long and arduous journey.

Full of optimism about the future, the soldiers of the KPRA waged vigorous small-unit activities and speeded up their military and political training.

In mid-April 1941, a neutrality pact was signed between the Soviet Union and Japan. The news greatly affected the Korean revolutionaries. Some guerrillas felt apprehension about the prospects for the Korean revolution. A heavy cloud hung over the training base.

Aware of the atmosphere at the base, Kim Jong Suk got together with the guerrillas, though she was busy with her preparations for departure.

She said, "The more complicated the situation gets, the more we should be resolved to carry out our revolution on our own responsibility by believing in and drawing on the strength of our people.

"It is an expression of worship of big powers to think that we can achieve national liberation only with the help of big countries.

Did we trust in others when we started the revolution? Or did we wage the revolution by relying on them? We have confronted the strong Japanese aggressors by mobilizing the broad sections of the people who follow General Kim Il Sung, and putting them under arms. To emerge victorious in the revolution, we must get rid of worship of big countries and strengthen our own revolutionary forces as the Commander instructed."

She again met the commanding officers and men of the KPRA on several occasions, bringing them to understand the irremovable contradiction between the Soviet Union and Japan and the inevitability of the victory of the Korean revolution, and instilling in them the conviction of sure victory based on Kim Il Sung's ideas and lines.

Early in May that year, she left the training base in command of a small unit.

She acquainted herself with the work of the political operation teams and underground organizations along the Tuman River, before proceeding in the middle of the month to the temporary secret base at Jiapigou, Wangqing County.

Kim Il greeted her at the entrance to the base, and guided her to Headquarters. She reported to Kim Il Sung on the work of the political operation teams and underground organizations along the Tuman River, and passed on to him information from various small units and the press cuttings she had prepared.

Kim Il Sung was satisfied with the report, saying that it was very valuable for him.

She also told him in detail about the ideological wavering and deviations revealed among the soldiers in connection with the Soviet-Japan Neutrality Pact.

Kim Il Sung said in front of the commanding officers that he had expected such tendencies and, that if they failed to put them to rights, they would present many difficulties to the Korean revolution. He continued that he would go to the homeland as

soon as possible, and hold a meeting of the heads of the small units and teams of the KPRA and the underground organizations to give them a correct understanding of the pact, and stress again on the need to maintain the independent stand in the revolutionary struggle.

Upon his instructions, an officer was soon dispatched to the homeland to make preparations for the meeting.

Furthermore, Kim Il Sung put forward the slogan, "Let us carry out the Korean revolution by our own efforts!" and made sure that a vigorous education campaign was waged to rid the soldiers of the KPRA of the worship of big countries and accomplish the Korean revolution by the efforts of Koreans themselves.

In mid-May Kim Jong Suk left the Jiapigou temporary secret base in the company of Kim Il Sung. The unit arrived at Hanconggou, Antu County, via Erdaohezi.

Saying that he was going to convene in mid-June the meeting of the heads of the small units, small teams and revolutionary organizations active in the homeland and the Changbai area, Kim Il Sung assigned to Kim Jong Suk the task of contacting them, so that they could gather at the Kanbaeksan Secret Camp.

Kim Jong Suk left Hanconggou with a small unit, including Han Chang Bong and Han Thae Ryong, for the Paektusan Secret Camp.

Arriving at Xiaoshahe, Antu County, she left some members of her unit the task of learning about the activities of the revolutionary organizations in the area. The unit then continued the march. Near Tianshangshui, Shiwudaogou, Changbai County, she divided the small unit into several teams, and dispatched them to various areas. She herself decided to go to Jiazaishui.

The members of the team objected to her going to that village in person.

"Though many organizations in the Changbai area were damaged at the time of the 'Hyesan incident'," she said, "the organization there survived. During the Arduous March', it supported us both materially and morally despite all risks. They will be waiting for us anxiously." She then led the way to the village.

In Jiazaishui, she met the organization members there, who had been worrying about losing touch with Headquarters for a long time. Explaining to them the prevailing situation, and Kim Il Sung's ideas on taking the initiative in greeting the great event of national liberation, she instructed them to carry on various forms of mass struggle with a firm conviction in victory.

From there, she went to Pudaoshan, Taoquanli, where the two-man team of Han Chang Bong and Han Thae Ryong would be waiting for her.

Basing themselves in Pudaoshan for some days, the unit visited several villages in the Xiagangqu area to grasp the situation.

After finishing their work, they left Pudaoshan and marched towards Heixiazigou. In Defugou, Shijiudaogou, they captured two soldiers of the puppet Manchukuo army. The captives revealed that their unit had been deployed in the Hongtoushan area and they had been making preparations to return home because "public order" had been "secured" in the Changbai region. This meant that the enemy in this area had relaxed his guard. This was very important information.

After analyzing the enemy movements on the basis of this information and messages from various teams, Kim Jong Suk came to the conclusion that the enemy's state of mind should be capitalized on, to push forward the work of expanding the revolutionary organizations into the homeland.

Early in June, she arrived at the Paektusan Secret Camp.

AT THE PAEKTUSAN SECRET CAMP AGAIN

After greeting the small-unit members at the Paektusan Secret Camp, Kim Jong Suk set to work without a moment's rest. She dispatched messengers to various places to summon those who were to attend the meeting at Mt. Kanbaek, and prepared a report of her work to be submitted to Kim Il Sung. Then, together with the head of the secret camp, she went to the Kanbaeksan Secret Camp, where Kim Il Sung was planning to hold an important meeting a few days later. Staying there for some days, she ensured that full preparations were made for the meeting.

While she was there, the guerrillas at the Paektusan Secret Camp decided to build a log cabin where she could live and work. Until then, she had stayed in the cabin of the sewing unit with other women guerrillas. Han Chang Bong, Kim Jun Ik and others began to build a cabin by the Sobaek Stream at the foot of Jangsu Peak (present-day Jong Il Peak). Nobody suspected that the log cabin would become half a century later a historic place called the "native home at the Paektusan Secret Camp".

One day in mid-June, Kim Il Sung came to the secret camp.

Kim Jong Suk, who had returned from the Kanbaeksan Secret Camp in anticipation of his arrival, guided him to the log cabin built for Headquarters. An anti-Japanese revolutionary veteran, Kim Ik Hyon, who accompanied Kim Il Sung as a member of the small unit, recalls the occasion in this way:

"Entering the log cabin following Comrade Kim Il Sung, I could not but be surprised. The desk and chairs were new ones, and the kettle was also a shining new one. I whispered in the ear of the head of the secret camp that he must have taken much trouble to lay out the cabin. He shook his head, and said that it was all the result of Comrade Kim Jong Suk's care."

Kim Jong Suk reported to Kim Il Sung how the small units and groups of the KPRA and the revolutionary organizations in various places in Korea and in the Changbai area were operating. It was already evening by the time she finished the report.

After her report, the head of the secret camp told Kim Il Sung about the new log cabin built by the Sobaek Stream. He said that although the guerrillas in the secret camp had built the cabin with all sincerity for Kim Jong Suk, she had so far refused to stay in it, adding that the cabin had remained vacant.

That evening, when they finished their meal, of boiled millet with roasted charr and a cold dish of edible mountain herbs, Kim Il Sung advised Kim Jong Suk that she should accept her comrades' sincerity and live up to their affection with a greater devotion to the revolution. Those at the table supported his advice. From that day she began to stay in the log cabin.

Two days after arriving at the secret camp, Kim Il Sung, accompanied by Kim Jong Suk, went to the Kanbaeksan Secret Camp. There, a meeting of the heads of the small units and groups of the KPRA and the revolutionary organizations active in the homeland and Changbai, China, was held.

At the meeting, Kim Il Sung got acquainted with their work and, on the basis of it, indicated the direction of their future work, stressing that all the KPRA political operatives and members of revolutionary organizations should maintain the stand of independence and cherish the faith in sure victory in view of the Japanese imperialist ideological propaganda conducted more viciously after the signing of the Soviet-Japanese Neutrality Pact. He added that they should fight more courageously under the revolutionary slogan, "Let us accomplish the Korean revolution by our own efforts!"

After the meeting, Kim Il Sung gave Kim Jong Suk the tasks she had to execute at the Paektusan Secret Camp, and left the camp.

Kim Jong Suk thought that, in order to perform these tasks, it would be important first of all to maintain a close relationship with the small units and groups from the KPRA, and the revolutionary organizations active in the homeland and in the areas along the Amnok and Tuman rivers so that they could be informed of the intentions of Headquarters in time and carry them out. She dispatched two-man and three-man groups to the secret bases and temporary secret bases.

Until then, the Paektusan Secret Camp had not been doing efficiently the work of guiding on the spot the small units and groups in various places. So it had become a practice for the messengers from the small units and groups to come to the camp and return with new tasks.

Kim Jong Suk saw to it that this practice was eliminated and that teams were dispatched to the various places in Korea to grasp the work results of the small units, groups and revolutionary organizations, and inform them of the intentions of Headquarters. This enabled the intentions of Headquarters to be transmitted to them in time, and in turn they could act in a mobile fashion.

One day in August 1941, Kim Jong Suk at the secret camp received a letter Kim Il Sung had sent her. In the letter, he instructed her to see that the policies advanced at the meetings held at Thaksanggol and Jiapigou were implemented in the areas in the homeland and along the Amnok around the Paektusan Secret Camp.

Leaving the Paektusan Secret Camp, Kim Il Sung had gone to Thaksanggol in Phungri-ri, Onsong County, Korea, where he had presided over a meeting of the political operatives and chiefs of secret revolutionary organizations. He had then proceeded to Jiapigou, Wangqing County, China, and convoked a meeting of

the chiefs of small units of the KPRA. At this meeting, he had made a speech, titled, Let Us Consummate the Cause of National Liberation with Firm Conviction in Victory.

Kim Jong Suk could read in the letter the thorny path Kim Il Sung must have trekked.

The situation in those days was very complex. Attacking the Soviet Union by surprise, fascist Germany had occupied a vast area of the Soviet Union by relying on its superior armaments, and its troops were now deep in Soviet territory. The socialist Soviet Union was experiencing unprecedentedly harsh trials.

As Germany invaded the Soviet Union two months after the conclusion of a neutrality pact between Japan and the Soviet Union, Japan immediately ordered the Kwantung Army to stage "special exercises". This was as good as a preliminary order for a war against the Soviet Union. However, the Soviet Union maintained neutrality though it knew full well that the neutrality pact was Japan's smokescreen to hide its ambition to seize the territory east of the Urals. It tried not to be caught in a two-front war, in the east and in the west.

In this situation, who should we trust and ask for support for the Korean revolution, and wasn't the Korean revolution as pitiful as a small boat that had lost its home port in a turbulent sea, i.e., a world war? This was the thinking of some people in those days. To make matters worse, the Japanese disinformation campaign grew intense.

It was in those days that Ji Kap Ryong, a member of Kim Ik Hyon's small unit, gave up the revolution and went over to the enemy-held area.

Kim Jong Suk had known Ji from her days in Chechangzi. He had fought fairly well in battles, but growing pessimistic in face of the turbulent international situation and the arduousness of the struggle in this situation, he escaped from the revolutionary ranks.

This kept her wide awake at nights.

A few days later, after hearing the report of the group that had been to the secret bases about the work of the revolutionary organizations in the Musan and Yonsa areas, she made up her mind to inspect the areas in person. She felt that some people there were vacillating ideologically in the rapidly changing situation. All the others were against her opinion. They said that her health was not good and she needed rest. But they could not persuade her.

She left the secret camp for the Musan and Yonsa areas with a few companions.

Arriving at the camp in the Mulbanga Valley at the secret base on Kuksa Peak, she met the heads of the revolutionary organizations in the Musan, Yonsa and Samjang areas.

Hearing their work report, she felt gloomy. In the past, struggles against the Japanese plunder of timber had been waged one after another at the felling and rafting stations in the Yonsa area. The Japanese plan to build a power station on the Sodu River had not been realized on schedule. Owing to the continual slow-down, strikes and destruction of rafts along the scores of miles of the Yonmyon and Sodu rivers, the Japanese imperialists had suffered a loss of tens of thousands of cubic metres of timber in 1939. In the following year, they had failed to send rafts for ten days a month. In the summer of that year, they had had to give a "banquet" to appease the Korean workers at the lumber stations. At the construction sites of the Paegam-Musan railway, the workers under the guidance of the revolutionary organization members had buried a great quantity of electricity lines and working tools sabotaging the project. But now their struggle was confined to the destruction of rafts.

Kim Jong Suk informed the attendants at the meeting of the gist of the speeches Kim Il Sung had made at the Thaksanggol and Jiapigou meetings. Then she pointed out that the reason for the mistakes revealed in their work was that they had lost faith in

victory and failed to actively rally the anti-Japanese patriotic forces and organize the anti-Japanese, anti-war struggle, thinking that the Korean revolution had no one to rely on. She added that they should remember Kim Il Sung's call to consummate the Korean revolution by the efforts of Koreans themselves in the face of all challenges and fight to the last for national liberation. She gave them the tasks of training hard-core elements, expanding their organizations, concentrating on some details in the political work with the masses, protecting organizations and intensifying their struggle, and organizing workers' shock brigades, paramilitary corps and other paramilitary organizations.

She proceeded to Yondu Peak in Tokso-ri, Musan County. At the foot of the peak, she met the political operatives of the KPRA and the heads of the revolutionary organizations active in the Musan area. They had been waiting for her arrival. They were moved by her coming all the way from Mt. Paektu through the enemy's strict cordon.

She first got acquainted with the composition of the organizations, their work and the problems arising in their work. She then held a meeting at the site of a signal fire on Yondu Peak. She explained to them the situation and Kim Il Sung's idea for national liberation, and advanced the tasks for carrying out his idea.

Thanks to her energetic activities, the revolutionary organizations in the Musan and Yonsa areas that had wavered in the face of the grave situation began to work again, full of vigor.

The workers at the construction site of the power station on the Sodu River staged strikes the tunnels from No. 1 to No.10 in succession, demanding improved treatment, labour safety measures, and other things. The Japanese managerial staff could not but suspend the construction. And owing to the continual slow-down and strikes waged by the workers, the railway project between Paegam and Musan that had been started to aid the

Japanese invasion of the Asian continent and the Pacific War was completed only in December 1944, when Japan's defeat was only a matter of time.

With regard to the intense struggle of the revolutionary organizations in the Musan and Yonsa areas, the police chief of North Hamgyong Province said, after inspecting the border areas, "If we do not remain on full alert even for the smallest matter, we cannot foresee when or where an incident might break out." An assistant political inspector of a police station said, "If I don't have my pistol in my hand, I cannot go to sleep however tired I am. I cannot forget the state of emergency even in my dreams."

On her return to the Paektusan Secret Camp, Kim Jong Suk went this time to the Sinpha area. There she studied the work of the heads of the secret revolutionary organizations in the area, and explained the gist of Kim Il Sung's letter, instilling in them the faith in sure victory. She sent a guerrilla who accompanied her to Huchang with the task of inspecting the organizations in Kumchang and the areas around Mts. Oga and Rangnim, and another to Koksan, Hwanghae Province, with the task of transmitting to the organizations there Kim Il Sung's new policy for political and military activities.

In this way, during her days at the Paektusan Secret Camp Kim Jong Suk did not have any proper rest, meeting people who came to the camp continually, hearing their reports and sending them back with new tasks. In addition, she herself went to the enemy-held areas to guide their work on the spot.

THE BIRTH OF KIM JONG IL, SON OF MT. PAEKTU

In February 1942, the Paektusan Secret Camp greeted a great event. At dawn on the 16th of that month, Kim Jong Suk gave birth to Kim Jong Il in her simple log cabin at the camp.

The anti-Japanese revolutionary veterans who were in the camp that day still recollect that the snowstorm that had been raging the previous day subsided at the same time, and it was unusually clear and calm.

The Korean Meteorological Monthly, published by the Japanese hydrometeorological institution, recorded that not only the areas around Mt. Paektu but also the whole of Korea, including Chongjin, Sinuiju, Pyongyang, Seoul and Pusan, were clear and calm on February 16, 1942.

Choe Tok Jun, a member of the Committee for the Study of the 21st Century in south Korea, wrote the meaning of that day in this way recollecting what he had heard from Choe Il Chon, author of A Short History of the Korean Revolutionary Movement Overseas:

"General Kim Jong Il was born of guerrillas on Mt. Paektu, the ancestral mountain of Korea, hearing the roar of gunfire on the battlefields of the anti-Japanese war, a site of confrontation between the new and old eras. It was the birth of a son of guerrillas, unprecedented in the 5,000-year-long history of the Korean nation, nay, in the history of mankind.

"In history there have been many great and famous men and generals. But never has there been a man who was born of famous guerrilla generals on the sacred mountain of his nation as he was. I think this is why a believer in Chondoism said Kim Jong Il was great from his birth, and that he was born shouldering the destiny of the saviour of the world. And it might be from this that the guerrilla warriors who had fought bloody battles in the wilderness called him Shining Star on Paektu, saying a hero who would pacify the whole world sitting on Mt. Paektu had been born, and named him Kim Jong Il (a homonym for Jong Il, Jong meaning

'righteous' and Il meaning 'sun') reflecting their desire that he would become 'a bright sun' like General Kim Il Sung."

The fighters of the anti-Japanese revolution named the peak at the back of his native home Jangsu Peak (General Peak-Tr.) signifying that a general, who would succeed Kim Il Sung, had been born at its foot.

Around the days of Kim Jong Il's birth only a few women guerrillas and members of a small unit were near Kim Jong Suk. She wrapped her newborn baby in her military uniform.

Women guerrillas boiled for her uncrushed maize and soup of dried wild herbs. With the bits of cloth they had found in their knapsacks, and cotton wool they had picked one thread at a time from their padded coats, they patched a quilt together. They suggested fetching some cloth from the Kanbaeksan Secret Camp, but Kim Jong Suk would not allow them to do so. She said, smiling, that she quite liked the quilt, as it was associated with their sincerity, and added, "When the country is liberated, let us build excellent nurseries in various places and bring up the rising generation so that they will envy nothing in the world."

Kim Jong Suk used to wrap her baby in the quilt and an army blanket, and sing this lullaby:

Sleep, sleep well, my baby,
Grow up quickly and shoulder your gun
And fight, you in front, I behind you,
Shouting cheers of national liberation.

Sleep, sleep well, my baby,
Grow up quickly and hold high the Red flag
And fight, you in front, I behind you,
To bring communism to the world.

The guerrillas in the secret camp showed much concern for her health, but she refused any special treatment. When Kim Jun Ik, called "Uncle" in the camp, made bean-curd dregs for her with the beans kept for emergency, she reprimanded him.

One day Kim Pong Sok, chief orderly of Headquarters, came to the camp bringing with him a knapsack full of glutinous millet for Kim Jong Suk. From the summer of 1937 he had accompanied Kim Jong Suk several times on her mission to the homeland. Having seen her grown so weak, he discussed with Kim Jun Ik to make cakes with the millet.

Saying that they should not violate the discipline out of sympathy for her and that they could not think about implementing the tasks given by Kim Il Sung when they placed themselves outside the discipline, she scooped up the grains immersed in water to be macerated, and dried them.

Taking only the minimum ration as before, she dispatched small units and liaison men to various places, studied the reports submitted and indicated relevant ways of work. At nights, she read Kim Il Sung's works published by the secretariat of Headquarters and the books, newspapers and periodicals sent by the secret organizations. She would study every night under the fire set to pine knots until the pileful of them were burned out.

Kim Jun Ik, unable to see her any longer working even at midnight without taking a proper meal, asked her to take rest at night even if she had to read books, saying that she would have much time to study in the future. For him, she was a commanding officer, who was leading the small units and groups of the KPRA and the revolutionary organizations to the implementation of Kim Il Sung's operational policies, and mother, who was bringing up the sun of the future.

With a smile on her face, she asked him what he would do after the liberation of the country.

He expressed his cherished thought that he would go to his native village and engage in farming.

She said that it would be happy to farm in the liberated home village and continued, "I'm afraid that we, revolutionaries, could not lead an easy life farming in the liberated country. At first, I also dreamed of farming in happiness in my native village freed from the Japanese imperialists and landlords. But working with the Children's Corps, I thought of becoming an educator to bring up the sons and daughters of the revolutionary martyrs, workers and peasants. Now, my thought has changed. With O Jung Hup and Kim Ju Hyon who had worked near General Kim Il Sung falling in action, I have realized that I have to take over for them. So I am reading books on economics and even on day-to-day social life."

In this way, even in the hard living circumstances she performed her revolutionary tasks and studied zealously for the motherland to be liberated, while nursing her baby.

Kim Il Sung, in command of a small unit, returned to the camp after months of absence. The sentry, overwhelmed by joy, forgot to salute him in a proper way. When he shouted, "The Commander has come!" all those in the camp rushed out. Kim Jong Suk, with her son in her arms, was standing behind them. A woman guerrilla took him from her and handed him to Kim Il Sung.

Holding his son in his embrace, Kim Il Sung said, "Let us bring up the younger generation well so that they will take over the revolutionary cause. After liberating the country, we must build a new Korea and continue to build socialism and communism on the land. It is our will to let the younger generation carry forward the Red flag of the revolution which was raised high on Mt. Paektu."

With Kim Il Sung in the camp, the commanding personnel and rank-and-file soldiers were busy with important meetings and

various demonstration lectures, but they never failed to drop in at the small log cabin at breaks. Some bowls on a shelf, a dining table hanging on a wall, a bush-clover basket, army blankets, simple quilts and knapsacks were all to be seen in the kitchen and living room. What were extraordinary were the patched quilt and an indoor broom an orderly made with an eagle's feathers.

One day visiting the log cabin, the commanding officers and guerrillas said that they had not performed their duty properly. At that moment Kim Jong Suk was out and a woman guerrilla was looking after the baby. When they were discussing how the small units and groups to be dispatched this time would obtain household goods, Kim Il Sung entered the room.

Kim Il Sung said to them, "You have built this cabin with all your sincerity, and I'm very sorry to have failed to give you a housewarming party. Please have your seats. As for the quilts you are talking about, they are not a big problem. Of course, I understand your sincerity. Jong Suk and I are very grateful to you for our working for the revolution in good health enjoying your affection. In view of the situation, we cannot bring up the younger generation in clover and the conditions do not permit us.

"We must bring them up to be sturdy in the flames of the anti-Japanese war, not in a warm greenhouse but in the snowstorm of Mt. Paektu. Only then will they continue our revolution, remembering their young days even in their happy life in the liberated motherland."

The life in the Paektusan Secret Camp where Kim Jong Il was born and the training base in the Soviet Union where he grew up was very hard at that time. The people of Korea were living on defatted bean cake owing to the Japanese imperialist plunder and the life in the training base in the Soviet Union was quite frugal because of the Soviet-German War. Until the day of national liberation Kim Jong Il wore clothes Kim Jong Suk had made by shortening some of the uniforms of hers and Kim Il Sung's and

used the patched quilts made in the days at the Paektusan Secret Camp. That sight weighed on Rim Chun Chu so heavily that when he returned to the motherland for holidays while working in Yanbian, Northeast China, after Korea's liberation, he brought with him 500 blankets and gave them to Kim Il Sung and Kim Jong Suk as a gift.

The anti-Japanese revolutionary fighters tried their best to help Kim Jong Suk and played with young Kim Jong Il whenever they had free time.

Kim Myong Jun and Rim Chun Chu called on Kim Jong Suk every day bringing with them goat milk; sometimes they would save little by little the bread rationed out to them and give it to Kim Jong Suk.

Kim Jong Suk and Rim Chun Chu had been friends for a long time. When Kim Jong Suk had been attending at night school in Fuyandong, Rim Chun Chu had taught there. When Kim Jong Suk's mother had been ill, Rim had treated the woman. When Kim Jong Suk had lost consciousness on her way to the guerrilla zone, he had given her medical help.

The deep friendly relations between Kim Jong Suk and him developed, after Kim Jong Il's birth, as his devotion to Kim Jong Il who would carry forward the revolutionary cause of Juche pioneered by Kim Il Sung. Once he went on a mission to an enemy-held area and returned carrying dozens of eggs with him through a forest of bayonets.

In the days of the small-unit activities Ri Ul Sol always paid close attention to young Kim Jong Il's safety and life, trying his best to spend his spare time with the boy.

O Jin U[30] and other guerrillas did the same.

Kim Chaek[31] always called young Kim Jong Il "Little General".

With regard to the blood-sealed ties between Kim Jong Il and the anti-Japanese revolutionary veterans, Kim Il Sung once said:

"Many people say that we have found a good solution to the problem of leadership succession. But I want to say that the anti-Japanese revolutionary veterans played an important role in solving the problem. They brought him his food and clothing and taught him to walk when he was an infant. Right from those days trust in and respect for them sprouted in Kim Jong Il's heart, and trust in and intimacy with him sprouted in their hearts. It was the anti-Japanese revolutionary fighters who played leading and active roles in his ideological and spiritual growth and in his emotional development. Kim Jong Il's firm confidence of victory, iron will and revolutionary optimism may be said to have been enriched and tempered through his intimate relationship with the veterans."

8. IN ANTICIPATION OF THE FINAL CAMPAIGN

MILITARY AND POLITICAL TRAINING IN THE TRAINING BASE

In March 1943, Kim Jong Suk left the Paektusan Secret Camp with her son for the training base near Khabarovsk in the USSR.

In those days the men of the KPRA underwent intensive political study and military training at the base while at the same time carrying out brisk small-unit actions and reconnaissance missions.

At the training base, Kim Jong Suk devoted all her energy and brainpower to political study and military training, true to the intention of Kim Il Sung to train the officers and men of the KPRA to be competent political and military cadres who would

bring the campaign for national liberation to victory, and sturdy pillars of liberated new Korea.

She was entrusted with the task of looking after the everyday lives of the women guerrillas.

Education at the base was not confined to military training; it encompassed political education as well.

Kim Jong Suk was so engrossed in studying that she often forgot her meals. When others said to her that, though studying was important, she should not skip meals, she would answer that, for revolutionaries, studying is more important than eating.

Kim Jong Suk studied day and night The Korean Revolutionaries Must Know Korea Well, a speech Kim Il Sung made to the political cadres and political instructors of the KPRA. Well-versed in the work, she said, she felt as if she was looking down upon the whole of Korea from the top of Mt. Paektu.

One day, a seminar on the work was held at the unit. What she said at the seminar was so logical, profound and impressive that Rim Chun Chu could recollect, even after t 30 years had elapsed, most of her remarks of that day.

Along with the study of military theory, guerrillas carried out military exercises at the training base. Every day they had to undergo various drills for modern warfare, including tactical, parachuting, shooting, skiing and radio communication training. The training was so intense that even the able-bodied men guerrillas found it very hard. But no woman guerrilla dropped out of the training.

Kim Jong Suk took part in all kinds of training tenaciously.

Kim Il Sung attached special importance to the training for swimming, considering the fact that Korea is a maritime country.

Most of the women guerrillas, who had grown up without ever seeing the sea, did not know how to swim.

Jon Sun Hui was the best swimmer. Kim Jong Suk saw to it that Jon taught swimming to the women guerrillas, some of whom were afraid of the water at first.

During a river-crossing drill, Kim Jong Suk encouraged the women guerrillas who were too exhausted to keep up with the advancing ranks, by saying, "Let's think of the other side of the river as our homeland. Then fresh strength will soar up inside us."

Inspired by her words, every one of them crossed the Amur River, which is hundreds of metres wide.

Forced marches were very tough for the women guerrillas.

In the winter of 1943, a forced march competition between units was held. The unit led by Kim Jong Suk, though composed of women and very young men, gained over other units one after another to everyone's surprise and passed the finishing post with not a single laggard. All the officers and men, struck by the unexpected result, congratulated Kim Jong Suk.

For the drill in parachuting for airborne operations, the headquarters of the training base decided to exempt women guerrillas from the drill for safety reasons.

Kim Jong Suk demanded that women guerrillas, too, be allowed to take part in the drill, saying that the drill was for the final campaign for national liberation. Finally the headquarters accepted her demand.

Women guerrillas performed the preliminary training successfully-touch-down with both feet close together and spinning around on a swivel chair to develop the ability to combat dizziness. But, at the next stage, they began to feel difficulty. Some closed their eyes when jumping down from a high place.

Kim Jong Suk inspired these women by telling them that they were undergoing training to defeat the enemy and liberate their parents, brothers and sisters.

In this way, women guerrillas got themselves prepared for parachuting.

During the first parachuting practice, Kim Jong Suk jumped off the plane first, saying, "Comrades, let's meet on the ground!" as soon as the commander gave the order to start. The other women guerrillas followed suit.

All of them landed on the fixed spot, and men guerrillas rushed to them to give them bouquets of congratulation.

In the wireless communication drill, too, Kim Jong Suk displayed remarkable skill. When some women guerrillas displayed less enthusiasm in the practice for first aid, regarding it as of secondary importance, she reproached them, saying, "Have you already forgotten that we lost many of our valuable comrades because we were ignorant of medical knowledge? Each of you has had such a heart-rending experience on many occasions. We must not lose any more precious comrades. We must not forget our bitter experience, and we must learn first aid."

Every piece of training was for her a link in the whole chain of preparation for the final campaign to liberate the country.

Whenever her colleagues advised her to have a rest or reduce the intensity of training, she told them that there was not much time left for them and the day was not far off when they would return to the homeland in the company of General Kim Il Sung.

For Kim Jong Suk, a day was no longer than it was for others. However, she did ten or twenty days' work in this twenty-four-hour day; she assisted Kim Il Sung, executed his instructions, helped solve all problems, big and small, arising in the unit, and looked after the everyday lives of the commanding officers and men.

In her spare time, she gathered edible herbs to supplement the diet of the guerrillas.

Thus, she made active contributions to hastening the great event of national liberation by leading the guerrillas not only in military and political training but also in day-to-day life.

FAMOUS CRACK SHOT

At the training base, Kim Jong Suk paid close attention to target practice by the soldiers of the KPRA, and set an example for them.

One March day in 1944, a grand shooting competition was held at the training base. The competition was significant in that the soldiers of the KPRA could display how prepared they were for the decisive battle for national liberation.

Among the soldiers there were many crack shots who had gained distinction in the battles fought against the Japanese imperialists. One had shot at night at the electric lamps in an enemy barracks more than one hundred metres away, shattering all of them and striking terror into the enemy. Another had cut a telephone line with a single pistol shot, disrupting the enemy's communications.

The competition included target rifle shooting, and shooting with handguns, light machine-guns and heavy machine-guns. Rifle shooting consisted of firing at a round target at a range of 100 metres, a half-length turning target at 200 metres, a running target at 300 metres and five bottles at 100 metres. Handgun shooting consisted of firing at a round target and three bottles, which had to be hit after the shooter had spun round.

The shooters took up their positions by turns, and showed their marksmanship.

When Kim Jong Suk occupied the firing position in her turn, the audience watched her with bated breath. They all knew that her marksmanship was so remarkable that she was called a legendary crack shot.

After the Hongtoushan battle, her comrades had known that she had shot to death 40 enemy soldiers, only by counting the bullets missing from her cartridge belt, not by asking her.

Her marksmanship was made known again at the training base. When the guerrillas were taking a break during a skiing training session, a pheasant took wing beside them. They took aim at the pheasant with their rifles, and fired almost at the same time, but the pheasant had flew farther and farther away. Kim Jong Suk put on her skis, and chased the pheasant. Drawing her pistol, she fired at it just as she was jumping. The pheasant dropped like stone. At the sight of this, all the officers and men around expressed great admiration. The guerrillas who had not been present regretted having missed an opportunity to see her amazing marksmanship.

Now, almost simultaneously with the order to fire, three shots rang out, and all hit the dead centre of the target, the size merely of a small coin, scoring the maximum 30 points. Following that, she hit the turning target at the range of 200 metres and the running target 300 metres away at lightning speed. The next targets were five bottles 100 metres away. Kim Jong Suk took deliberate aim at the bottles, which looked like small dots at that distance, and fired, shattering all of them one by one.

Next, handgun shooting started. In this event the shooters had to fire at a round target, and then, after spinning round, at three bottles on a stand. Most of the shooters failed to hit all the bottles, missing one or two.

Kim Jong Suk hit all of them in a flash, as soon as she turned to face them, after hitting the round target. While she was shooting, everyone, forgetting to applaud her, only shouted, "Her bullets have eyes" and "The Devil himself would bow to her."

In the competition, Kim Jong Suk hit all the targets.

Kim Il Sung awarded a pistol to Kim Jong Suk, for winning the highest points. The whole unit congratulated her.

She had actually contributed to ensuring victory in battles and to saving the Korean revolution from crises several times: With her ace marksmanship she had killed the enemy soldiers who had been stealing towards the Headquarters of the KPRA at the Hongqihe battle; at the Dashahe battle she had saved the destiny of the Korean revolution and the Korean nation by shooting to death the enemy soldiers who had leveled their guns at Kim Il Sung.

Receiving the pistol from Kim Il Sung, she took it as a weapon of the revolution, which she must hold firm to hasten the day of restoration of the deprived country and liberation of the downtrodden people, and as a weapon of the working class which she must not lay down as long as imperialists existed on the earth.

On their return to the barracks from the shooting competition, the guerrillas asked her about the secret of her ace marksmanship. Some women guerrillas said that she was a born crack shot.

Kim Jong Suk wondered aloud with a smile, how marksmanship could be inborn. She said:

"I have made strenuous efforts day and night to improve my marksmanship, only thinking that I must defend General Kim Il Sung. For us, soldiers who are fighting under his command, improving marksmanship is not only a simple military task; it is a noble mission for defending General Kim Il Sung, who has shouldered the destiny of the nation."

A guardsman of Kim Il Sung must never miss the target-this was Kim Jong Suk's unshakable conviction and motto throughout her life.

One day after the liberation of the country, Kim Jong Suk went to Mangyongdae in company with Kim Il Sung. The guardsmen asked her to show them her marksmanship, pointing at a sparrow hawk flying high in the blue sky. They were recruits, who knew her marksmanship by hearsay.

Smiling, Kim Jong Suk declined their request. Kim Il Sung's grandfather Kim Po Hyon reproached them for making such a request, saying that hitting a flying bird was out of the question. Despite the rumours about her marksmanship, he doubted whether she could hit the sparrow hawk, which was flying quickly.

At that moment, Kim Il Sung looked up at the target, and told her to have a try.

Kim Jong Suk took a rifle from a guardsman, and leveled it at the bird, which, high up in the sky, looked no bigger than a small dot. However, almost simultaneously with a gunshot, the hawk fell to the ground.

Nodding, Kim Po Hyon said, "Indeed, the rumours were not false."

Well known is a story that she inscribed letters on a rock with pistol shots when she went to a certain place with Kim Il Sung. And when she went to Lagoon Samil in Mt. Kumgang, she hit a target floating on the waves. This episode is commemorated in the song An Unforgettable Gunshot at Lagoon Samil.

Many renowned archers and crack shots are recorded in Korean history, but none of them was aware of the mission entrusted to them by history, the nation and the revolution. Kim Jong Suk, however, aimed at every target bearing in mind the mission of defending the safety of Kim Il Sung, who shouldered the destiny of the nation and the revolution, a mission entrusted to her by the country, the nation and history.

THE FINAL CAMPAIGN

Entering the year 1944, the situation at home and abroad began to develop in favour of the Korean people in their struggle to

accomplish the cause of national liberation. The small-unit actions of the KPRA, various kinds of anti-Japanese struggles of the Korean people of all walks of life, including workers and peasants, and its successive defeats in the Pacific War and on the Chinese front drove Japan into a tight corner.

In those days, Kim Jong Suk waged an energetic struggle to implement Kim Il Sung's three-point line of national liberation-a general offensive of the KPRA, an all-people uprising and joint operations behind enemy lines.

While taking an active part in military and political training for the final showdown with the Japanese imperialists, she rendered help to the work of the small units and teams to be dispatched into the homeland. As she had stayed for a long time at the Paektusan Secret Camp guiding the work of the small units and teams of the KPRA and of the underground revolutionary organizations, she was more aware than others of the situation in the areas on the Amnok and Tuman rivers and at the secret bases in the homeland. For this reason, the members of the small units and teams left for the homeland only after talking with her.

Meeting in the autumn of 1944 the members of the small units and teams who were to go to the homeland, Kim Jong Suk said that they should have close links with the revolutionary organizations, paramilitary corps, production shock brigades, and workers' shock brigades in various parts of the country, and give them good guidance so that they could play a big role at the time of the final campaign for liberating the country. She told them in detail about the situations and even the geographical features of the areas where they were to operate. And she checked their accoutrements and prepared the food they would take on their journey.

Kim Jong Suk personally went to the homeland on several occasions leading a small unit.

In the homeland, she met the hard-core members of the party and ARF organizations in the Yonsa and Musan areas, organizations the work of which she had helped several times, and told them to hasten the preparations for an all-people resistance.

Her guidance in those days to the Sodusu branch organization of the ARF was a good example of her wisdom in overcoming difficulties and turning misfortune into a blessing.

From 1939, under the guidance of Kim Jong Suk, the branch organization had conducted go-slow strikes and sabotage of structures and machinery, and won victory in a strike. The workers' shock brigade played a big role in the strike. The organization was planning and ready for an armed revolt.

However, the organization faced an unexpected situation.

Being driven into a tight corner by the vigorous struggle of the workers and having sacrificed tremendous human and material resources in the Pacific War and the Sino-Japanese War, the Japanese imperialists decided to stop the construction of the Sodusu Hydroelectric Power Station, and began to conscript the workers there for the construction of a hydroelectric power station on the Tongno River (the present-day Jangja River--Tr.), and airports and naval bases in southern Korea. In this way, they attempted to concentrate manpower at some urgent projects of military importance and, at the same time, disperse the united revolutionary forces.

Thousands of workers had to take leave of one another. This meant the dispersion of the revolutionary forces.

The hard-core members of the organization met almost every day to work out a countermeasure.

All they could do, they agreed, was first to help the workers, who had not been conscripted, to get other jobs so as to settle there, and second to enable the others, who had been conscripted, to remain there by using one pretext or another. However, these

were improvisations with little chance of success. The dispersion of the revolutionary masses was inevitable.

The head of the organization said that he felt vexed to think of the dispersion of the organization members he had fostered so carefully and workers tempered in the struggle.

There seemed to be no way out for them.

Kim Jong Suk told him that, when they faced difficult and complicated problems, they should study in depth the instructions of Kim Il Sung to find proper solutions, and approach everything as a whole in broad terms, not within narrow boundaries.

She informed the core elements of the organization of Kim Il Sung's policy on making preparations for an all-people resistance, and continued, "The Japanese imperialists attempt to dragoon the workers to the construction sites, which are more important and, at the same time, to disperse and weaken our united revolutionary forces. In this situation, we can educate and train the organization members and other workers tempered in the struggle here, and send them to various areas so that they would play the vanguard role in giving the masses there a revolutionary influence. This would mean we are dispatching a great number of hard-core elements to the vast areas for the preparation for nationwide resistance. For example, you can tell the workers from the three southern regions[32] to go to their native places, rally their kinsfolk and friends behind organizations, prepare them for the final campaign against the Japanese imperialists, liberate their native places in cooperation with the KPRA, which would launch its advance on Mt. Paektu, and then meet you together in the liberated country."

From then on, many organization members and revolutionary workers in Sodusu fanned out across the country; everywhere they went, a national resistance organization came into being.

According to the conservative data of the Japanese aggressors, 500,000 people were enrolled in 180 anti-Japanese underground organizations in Korea in those days.

When she met the head of the party organization of the Musan area, Kim Jong Suk showed him the direction of work for the Paekuisa, a resistance organization of young miners. When she met the head of the party organization of the Yonsa area, she discussed with him about the ways to increase the ranks of the armed corps there formed for a nationwide resistance, and about their weaponry and training.

In addition, she met the heads of the branch ARF organizations from various areas to acquaint herself with their work, and assigned to the organizations the task of organizing, and enlisting the whole nation for the final campaign against the Japanese imperialists.

One of them was a representative of the ARF organization in Seoul. She heard from him a report on the activities of his organization, and inquired after Ri Young, whom she had dispatched from Pukchong to Seoul in July 1937.

She was in a position of giving overall guidance to the small units and teams of the KPRA and the revolutionary organizations in Korea. At the time when Nazi Germany had been defeated and it was clear that the Japanese imperialists were doomed, Kim Il Sung assigned to her the task of supervising the preparations the small units and teams of KPRA and the revolutionary organizations in northern Korea had made for the final campaign.

Having come to Korea again, she first met the members of the small units and teams who were on a reconnoitering mission in Sonbong and Rajin (the present-day Rason City-Tr.)-an area of strategic importance for the KPRA's all-out offensive.

She told them to enlist the members of the revolutionary organizations and other patriotic people in reconnaissance on the

one hand, and, on the other, to work positively with the individuals who kept contact with the enemy or served in the enemy establishments so as to collect accurate military and other information in time.

There was an ARF organization under the name of the Anti-Japanese Association in Sonbong involving a number of influential people who had kept continual contact with the Japanese. However, the small units and teams gave a wide berth to those people in their work, because some of the members of the teams had been killed as a consequence of betrayal by the host of the house they had dropped into or had been chased by the enemy after a chance meeting with strangers in the mountains.

To the members of the small units and teams who were so concerned with this problem, Kim Jong Suk said, "If you fail to distinguish foe from friend and drop your guard, you might be fooled by the enemy. But if you don't trust the people, the members of the revolutionary organizations at that, how can you work in the enemy-ruled areas or achieve victory in the revolutionary struggle? It is true that during the past underground activities we suffered heart-rending losses and experienced serious crises on several occasions because of evil people like the enemy's agents and stooges. However, all this was caused by a handful of traitors to the nation, never by the people. We intend to achieve national liberation in close cooperation with the masses by educating and rallying them around the anti-Japanese ranks. We must regard them as our revolutionary comrades-in-arms, and make it our invariable rule of conduct to trust them and rely on their strength in our struggle."

This was an opinion and rule of conduct Kim Jong Suk had invariably adhered to from her early days of the revolutionary struggle.

Kim Jong Suk continued that they should remain on the alert and ready at all times to take the initiative in coping with any

unexpected event, and make military preparations for destroying and annihilating the enemy's military installations and troops at one stroke once the situation turned favourable for this. Then, she expressed her confidence that they would play the role of eyes, ears and hands of Headquarters in the struggle to implement Kim Il Sung's policy, thus making a great contribution to the ultimate victory in the anti-Japanese war.

Among the members of the revolutionary organization in the Chongjin area was a former guerrilla who had fled from the Chechangzi guerrilla base after being suspected of being a member of the "Minsaengdan". He was working as head of the Thomak Anti-Japanese Workers' Association, an ARF organization.

Kim Jong Suk had known him in the days in Chechangzi.

Though ten years had passed since he had left the guerrilla base, she met him without hesitation. The former guerrilla was so moved to see her that he only shed tears.

Kim Jong Suk explained to him his task in the preparations for a nationwide resistance, and expressed her confidence that he would fight valiantly in the forth coming final, decisive campaign. He, in turn, made up his mind to distinguish himself in the do-or-die battle in pursuance of Kim Il Sung's intention.

Later, he proved true to his decision, and, as deputy head of the Chongjin City Security Station after the liberation of the country, undertook the duty of guarding Kim Jong Suk during her activities in Chongjin.

Kim Jong Suk then proceeded to Undok, Jungsan and other enemy areas of strategic importance, where she ensured that the small units and teams operating there made full preparations for harassing the enemy in the rear at the time of the final campaign.

The national resistance organizations in these areas played a big role in the decisive battle.

The people's armed corps organized in the areas of Hunyung and Mt. Mayu blew up the enemy's powder magazines and ammunition dumps, rendering a great contribution to the victory of the overall campaign. The Kkachibong Armed Corps in the Hoeryong area attacked the retreating enemy soldiers, and blew up powder magazines and an oil depot. They liberated Hoeryong by their own efforts, capturing five planes, scores of anti-aircraft guns, and quantities of clothing and equipment.

The fortifications in the Sonbong-Rajin and Undok-Sonbong areas, which the enemy had built with much effort for over 10 years, fell in a few days under the impact of the national revolt and the harassment operations conducted in these areas.

Rajin and Songjin fell to the people's armed corps.

On Mt. Paekhak, today there is a historic site, from where Kim Jong Suk unfolded her activities on the eve of the final campaign.

The site tells legendary tales about Kim Jong Suk as well as her revolutionary activities. Legends have it that "The woman general of Mt. Paektu employs the art of shrinking space, and has mastered the art of changing her shape," and "She makes the enemy blind by using magical power."

On August 9, 1945, Kim Il Sung ordered the KPRA units to start the general offensive for liberating the motherland.

The KPRA units, which had completed full preparations, launched the attack simultaneously on all fronts, in cooperation with Soviet forces.

In response, the people's armed corps struck the enemy from the rear and the Korean people rose in revolt.

On August 15, 1945, the Japanese imperialists surrendered.

Imprinted in the victorious anti-Japanese war are the exploits of Kim Jong Suk who always stoutly defended Kim Il Sung not only politically and ideologically but also with her own life, and

was in the vanguard of the implementation of Kim Il Sung's revolutionary lines and policies.

9. TRIUMPHAL RETURN TO HOMELAND

IN THE LIBERATED HOMELAND

Japan was reported to have signed an unconditional surrender on August 15, 1945. Kim Jong Suk heard the news of Japan's defeat at her training base. At the training base there were Headquarters and the paratroopers who were on standby to move into the homeland on a mission to lead national resistance in different parts of the country.

They danced, hugging each other, with the joy of having liberated their country. Imperialist Japan's defeat meant the realization of the cherished desire for which they had fought a bloody war for many years against the Japanese, under Kim Il Sung's leadership. They regretted, however, that they had missed the chance of taking part in a final decisive battle because of Japan's sudden surrender.

The end of the Second World War with the defeat of the fascist states opened up the prospects for many countries to build a new democratic society.

People's committees were organized, party organizations and public organizations with different names appeared throughout Korea as soon as Japan was defeated. They were led by the revolutionary organizations and the national resistance organizations, which had conducted the movement of the Association for the Restoration of the Fatherland and made preparations for the founding of the Party, in support of the idea and line of Kim Il Sung.

The soldiers of the KPRA at the training base were eager to return to their homeland as soon as possible. Kim Il Sung, however, was immersed in making preparations for the building of a new country, anticipating his triumphal return to the homeland.

Although the situation was good in the days immediately after liberation, complex problems were arising in the country. The remnants of the defeated Japanese army and counterrevolutionary forces were working insidiously, and factionalists already raised their heads and began to scramble for power. To make matters worse, the US army was to be stationed in the area of the country south of the 38th parallel, and the Soviet army in the area north of the line. This involved the danger of Korea becoming a theatre of confrontation between the democratic and reactionary forces.

In view of these developments, Kim Il Sung called a meeting of the military and political cadres of the KPRA on August 20, 1945, and made a speech, titled, On Building the Party, State and Armed Forces in the Liberated Homeland. This speech clearly indicated the way for the Korean people to build a democratic new Korea in the new situation after liberation. This very important speech provided the basic guideline for the building of the Party, state and armed forces.

He appointed the persons to be dispatched to provinces and major cities and counties to carry out the tasks of building the Party, state and armed forces, indicated their destinations, and organized a training course for them, which lasted several days.

Kim Jong Suk studied hard to acquire a profound understanding of the tasks set by Kim Il Sung, and participated in the training course with great enthusiasm.

After the training course, Headquarters and the unit of the KPRA which had been given an airborne mission, set off for the homeland.

Kim Il Sung decided to send the women guerrillas who had children to the homeland later, to avoid possible accidents on the way, and told them to remain at the training base for the time being. The women guerrillas unanimously asked him to let them join the advance party to the homeland. He said, however, that although he understood their feelings, they must not be swayed by the desire for a hasty return home. He explained that they must take good care of their dear children whom they had not been able to feed and clothe properly in the raging storm of revolution, that Kim Chol Ho and many other comrades had had the heart-rending experience of losing their children, and that such tragic events must not recur.

Kim Jong Suk remained with the other mother-guerrillas at the training base as advised by Kim Il Sung. While clearing up some unsettled matters at the training base, she devoted her efforts to

helping the other women guerrillas to acquire political and practical qualifications needed to perform their shares of duty in building a new Korea.

Kim Jong Suk made a deep study of Kim Il Sung's speech made on August 20 and his other works, and discussed them with the women comrades on several occasions. While at the training base, she studied the reality in the homeland, and enriched her knowledge of Kim Il Sung's line of building a new country, and helped the women guerrillas who had been trained in the armed struggle against the Japanese to prepare themselves for becoming stalwart builders of a new country.

Late in November 1945, Kim Jong Suk and her dear son embarked on a homeward voyage aboard a naval vessel in company with Kim Chol Ho, Kim Ok Sun and many other women fighters. On November 25, the coast of the homeland came in sight on the horizon.

Kim Jong Suk, standing on the deck side by side with her son Kim Jong Il, felt that the mountain range of the homeland, in the morning sunshine, was approaching to welcome them.

"Comrades," she shouted, "I can see the homeland over there, the homeland!"

The women fighters ran onto the deck, dancing along holding each other in each other's arms. Scalding tears were trickling down Kim Jong Suk's cheeks. How much she had yearned to see the land of her forefathers! Not for a moment had she forgotten her homeland during so many years of desperate battles! She had covered thousands of miles to do the work of a secret operative in the homeland, yet the homeland had been a dark zone of danger where the enemy held sway.

The shore of this homeland now emerged on the horizon, and was welcoming her homecoming.

Kim Jong Suk lifted her son, and, holding him high, said, "Look, that is the homeland!"

Her son waved both hands at the shore of the homeland about which his mother had often talked to him as if she were telling an old tale.

The ship entered the port of Sonbong. On the wharf were Sim Thae San and Kim Ryong Hwa, the anti-Japanese revolutionary veterans who had been assigned to work there. They welcomed Kim Jong Suk and her company and ushered them to lodgings. The wharf had been damaged by the fleeing Japanese, and was almost deserted.

Kim Jong Suk thus quietly returned to the homeland after 15 years of bloody struggle. She, together with her comrades-in-arms, set about the implementation of the tasks of building the Party, state and armed forces.

At Sonbong, she learned how the people were living, and how they were reconstructing the facilities that had been damaged by the fleeing Japanese. In company with other women fighters, she walked around, inspecting the streets of Sonbong, and then went to the wharf, from where the vast East Sea was visible.

Sim Thae San and Kim Ryong Hwa, who were in charge of the reconstruction of the wharf, told her how the harbour was being rebuilt.

Meanwhile, there spread among the people a rumour that the woman talking with the anti-Japanese veterans was the famous woman general from Mt. Paektu, Kim Jong Suk. People gathered from everywhere, and the wharf became crowded. The people were greatly excited to see with their own eyes the legendary anti-Japanese war heroine. An old woman came running from the crowd, and embraced Kim Jong Suk.

"What hardship you suffered under Japanese tyranny!" Kim Jong Suk said, holding the old woman's hands. "Now that the country is liberated, I wish you a happy and long life free from all worries."

Kim Jong Suk stepped onto the platform of the wharf that was under reconstruction. Thousands of eyes focussed on her. She bowed to the crowd, which exploded with cheers.

"Meeting you in this way today, I feel as if I were seeing my own parents, brothers and relatives after a long separation," Kim Jong Suk said. "How long we have waited for this day! While fighting in the mountains under the command of General Kim Il Sung, we never forgot you even for a single day."

A large number of young Koreans, she said, fell in battle in the forests of Mt. Paektu and in the wilderness of Manchuria, not living to see the liberated homeland. She emphasized that they should always remember the precious blood spilled by the revolutionary forerunners, and work hard to build a people's paradise in the homeland under the General's leadership, as the martyrs had wished. She closed her speech with an appeal: "Let us all unite closely behind the General and work hard to build a new prosperous, democratic Korea!"

The crowd cheered, shouting, "Long live General Kim Il Sung, the sun of the nation!" and "Long live liberated Korea!"

She proceeded along the shore. Old, damaged fishing vessels were on the beach; only a few small boats were usable. But she did not despair.

"We must not feel discouraged," she said to Kim Ryong Hwa, adding that the quickest way for the people in the coastal area to solve the urgent food problem was to catch fish in large quantities.

She talked about the need to repair the damaged vessels and fishing equipment, build new vessels and begin with fishing by using the small boats. She left the beach, and went to a farm house where soya beans were being threshed. She helped the threshing work, asked about the farming situation, and told the farmer that General Kim Il Sung was planning a future in which the people who worked the land would own the land.

The farmer and his wife expressed their gratitude to the General, and said that they would raise good crops to prove themselves worthy of the General's benevolence.

She learned from the anti-Japanese veterans who had been sent to that place how public organizations, especially the youth organization, were being formed in Sonbong. The YCL had been organized there. The League, however, had not increased its ranks greatly because it had admitted only young proletarians who believed in communism.

Meanwhile, the Liberated Youth League was rallying many young people into it, but it was involved in the distribution of enemy property and the like, and was interested only in giving sensational public lectures on current events.

Kim Jong Suk explained to Sim Thae San and Kim Ryong Hwa the General's line of building a democratic youth league by organizing young workers and peasants and many other young people, so that they would turn out to build a new country. She urged them to reorganize the YCL into a Democratic Youth League (DYL) so as to embrace a broad section of young people as soon as possible, as instructed by the General.

She met the chief of the labour department of the Liberated Youth League, and told him that the only way for the young people of liberated Korea to follow was to support the General's line of building a new country, and that all the young people of different strata should unite under the flag of democracy.

The anti-Japanese revolutionary women veterans who returned to their lodgings were making haste to go to Pyongyang where Kim Il Sung was. Kim Jong Suk, however, decided to postpone their journey to Pyongyang for some time. In order to assist the General in his work, she said, they should learn about the reality of the homeland. Without knowledge of the reality of the homeland, she continued, how they could assist the General and contribute to the building of a new country?

She persuaded them to explain to the people the three tasks of building the Party, state and armed forces, and lead them to turn out to build a new country.

She and her women comrades moved from Sonbong to Chongjin in a truck. An Kil, who had been dispatched to work in Chongjin, met them there. He guided them to their lodgings, a two-storey house in Haebang-dong, where they unpacked their suitcases late at night after travelling 100 kilometres in the cold of early winter. Kim Jong Suk made a telephone call to Kim Il Sung, who was in Pyongyang, and reported her arrival. He inquired about the health of the women comrades, and agreed to her suggestion that her company stay in Chongjin for some time, working and helping the comrades who had been dispatched there.

During the night, when the other women veterans were fast asleep, Kim Jong Suk planned what they should do in Chongjin. The Saegil Sinmun, a newspaper that was published in Chongjin in those days, carried a special article about her return to the homeland on the front page.

"Madam Kim Jong Suk (General Kim Il Sung's wife) arrived in Chongjin on the night of the 26th," the article said, "after more than ten years of arduous armed struggle in the wilderness of Manchuria in spite of her physical delicacy, eating in the wind, sleeping in the dew, braving snowstorms and courageously fighting, arm in hand, shoulder to shoulder with General Kim Il Sung, the man of revolution Korea has produced, to destroy Japanese imperialism, liberate Korea and carry out the Korean revolution."

On the morning of November 27, Kim Jong Suk met Choe Chun Guk, Pak Yong Sun and Sim Yun Gyong, who had been dispatched to work in Chongjin, and heard of the situation in North Hamgyong Province from them.

The situation in the province in those days was very complex. When An Kil and other anti-Japanese revolutionary veterans had

been sent by Kim Il Sung to work there, a man who had gone there upon Pak Hon Yong's directive was at the helm of the provincial Party committee, talking about the "Seoul centre" and overtly and covertly obstructing the implementation of the Party's organizational and political lines.

In the afternoon, Kim Jong Suk and the other women veterans climbed Mt. Komal. Having a full view of Chongjin, she said that the fleeing Japanese had destroyed all the factories. "In support of the General's line of building a new country," she observed, "we must rouse the people by means of vigorous political work. This is the task we should carry out here for the time being."

Next day, reporters from the Saegil Sinmun came to her lodgings in the falling snow to interview her. At the news of her arrival in Chongjin, they had asked An Kil to arrange a press interview with her for them. An Kil was concurrently the editor-in-chief of the newspaper. He had complied with their request.

The reporters said that they would like to hear how she, a woman, had been able to fight and defeat the one-million-strong Japanese army in Manchuria.

"I have nothing in particular to say about myself," she answered with a smile. "But I can tell you how the General destroyed the Japanese marauders."

She began speaking in this way, and dwelt on the strategy and tactics applied by Kim Il Sung while giving victorious leadership to the anti-Japanese armed struggle.

She went on to talk about her comrades-in-arms. While she was recollecting her comrades who had died without seeing the liberated homeland, her eyes were moist with tears. She did not mention herself.

"Your newspaper ought to write about the great General," she said when a reporter said he wanted to know about her career. "The story of soldiers has its place in their leader's history, hasn't it? So you should write about the General."

The reporters asked when she had embarked on the road of revolution, when she had joined the KPRA, and in which battles she had taken part. She gave brief answers to these questions, without mentioning anything about her distinguished services. Failing in their plan of highlighting her exploits in their newspaper, the reporters were extremely irritated. Feeling sorry to have taken up so much of her time, they stood up to go.

Shaking hands with them, she asked them to give a good explanation of the General's line and policies in their newspaper, to rouse the masses for the building of a new country.

The Saegil Sinmun carried a front-page article under the title, Plunged into the Revolutionary Movement as a Fourteen-Year-Old Girl of Fervour, and the sub-title, Madam Kim's Half Career. The article read in part:

"Madame Kim Jong Suk, the wife of Korea's revolutionary General Kim Il Sung, ... left her home at Fuyandong, Yanji County, in Jiandao, with revolutionary fervour and a high ambition at the age of 14, and ventured to join Kim Il Sung's guerrilla army, which was fighting bloody battles for national independence against the Japanese warlords' raging white terrorism in Manchuria.

"She fought, arms in hand, in the front ranks of the guerrilla army, risking her life more than once. ... Don't be surprised. She says that General Kim Il Sung is a virile young General in his thirties. The General is the man of revolution Korea has produced. He fought like a tiger in the fields of Manchuria cherishing an ambition to liberate the country, striking terror into the hearts of the Japanese warlords, and became renowned worldwide. ...

"He fought fierce battles in command of both Korean comrades and Chinese revolutionaries against the Japanese army, for the liberation of Korea. He is a great man we can be proud of.

"General Kim Il Sung is now working in good health in Pyongyang."

The newspaper printed another article under the title, The Woman Fighter Dedicates Half Her Life to Independence and Liberation; Let Us Follow the Example of Her Self-Sacrificing Spirit, quoting Kim Jong Suk's words spoken at the interview.

"In spite of the fatigue of her journey," the article commented, "Madam Kim Jong Suk vigorously shook hands with the visiting reporters on behalf of her comrades, saying, 'What hardships the brothers and sisters in the homeland have had to suffer!'

"She went on, 'As you know, Korea has not yet been completely liberated, so the Korean people have to make more sacrifices. They must first unite on a mass basis, and at the same time undertake construction with great energy. We Korean women must awaken to the situation in Korea, and work as one for the building of a great state. ... We must achieve women's emancipation, our aspiration, through the establishment of our state power and the complete independence of Korea as soon as possible. From now on, I will study the Korean situation, and work hard to build a new Korea.' "

The newspaper carrying the interview was circulated not only in North Hamgyong Province but also throughout the rest of the country, evoking a strong response.

A few days afterwards, Kim Il Sung read the article, and commented, "Comrade Kim Jong Suk spoke well. ... She said all that I thought and wanted to say."

During her stay in Chongjin, she instilled into the people what Kim Il Sung thought and wanted, and made all possible efforts to mobilize them in the struggle to build a new country.

On November 29, she called a consultative meeting of the women veteran Party members who had returned to the homeland with her. At the meeting, she talked about the work to be done in future.

"As in the past, so also in the liberated homeland in the future," Kim Jong Suk said, "We must live and fight as General

Kim Il Sung's revolutionary soldiers. The only difference in the struggle of the past and present is that in the past we fought, arms in hand, to destroy the Japanese imperialists, but from now on, we must reconstruct the factories and farm villages that have been destroyed by the fleeing Japanese, in other words, carry out General Kim Il Sung's line of building a new country. This line can be carried out only by the united effort of the entire people. We must, henceforth, work among the masses of different strata in Chongjin."

If they knew that we had fought against the Japanese under the General's leadership, she said, the people would like to hear a lot from us; in that case we must give them a clear understanding that General Kim Il Sung is the saviour of our nation, and that he is the veritable leader.

That day, Kim Jong Suk inspected the market in Sohung-dong, Chongjin. She told the officials there to stabilize prices in order to improve the people's standard of living, as wished by the General. The following day, she paid a visit to a medical practitioner, and encouraged him to be a doctor who faithfully served the people.

At a welcoming rally held in the Joson Hall, she watched a performance given in her honour by the Haebangmanghyang Opera Troupe. She advised the singers to sing revolutionary songs, songs of struggle that would contribute to the implementation of the General's line of nation building, rather than sentimental songs.

When the audience requested her to sing a song, she said that she, though not a good singer, would sing the song she had often sung yearning for her hometown and for her friends while fighting the Japanese in the forests of Mt. Paektu. She sang Nostalgia.

On December 1, Kim Jong Suk had a round-table talk with the officials of the Chongjin City People's Committee, and helped the work of the North Hamgyong Provincial committee for the preparation of the organization of the women's union.

On December 9, she inspected Chongjin Railway Station, guided by An Kil, and in the afternoon she took stock of the repair of the railway in the field. Although the weather was very cold, she went to the repair site, saying that the cold was nothing to worry about, as she had been used to sleep in the snow when fighting in the mountains. She got on a handcar and moved towards Susong by operating the handcar herself. The biting wind blew against her from the direction of Puryong Valley, and she caught glimpses of the factories damaged by the Japanese.

She stopped near the railway bridge across the Susong River, and inspected the repaired bridge and the railway tracks. Coming back to the spot where the railway was still under repair, she told the railwaymen that the railways were the arteries of the country, that they were the workers guarding these arteries, and that they should do a good job to lighten the burden on the General, who was working day and night, giving leadership to the cause of building the Party, state and armed forces.

At the council of the Chongjin City Labour Union on December 10, she said that the officials should explain to the workers the General's trust in and expectations of the working class, so that they took the lead in the Korean people's cause of building a new country, with the consciousness of being masters of their factories and their country, in support of the General's leadership, as befits the leading class of the revolution. She also met 30-odd delegates of the workers from different factories and other enterprises in the city. She spent hours, inculcating in them the General's idea of building a new country, and roused them to nation building.

On December 12, she visited the Chongjin Iron Works (the present-day Kim Chaek Iron and Steel Complex), and learned about the state of the iron works damaged by the fleeing Japanese. She sat together with the workers, who were discussing how to repair the blast furnace.

The workers were at a loss how to remove dozens of tons of molten iron and slag that had cooled down to a solid block inside the furnace. Kim Jong Suk told them to find a bold way of doing it. One of them suggested blasting, but he said that the problem was where to get the explosives. She encouraged them by saying that if they had the stamina of the anti-Japanese revolutionary fighters who had made Yanji bombs with their bare hands in the mountains and destroyed the Japanese, they would be able to obtain explosives.

In the yard of the iron works she met the assistant engineer who had repaired the locomotive, which the Japanese had discarded and kindled a fire for its boiler, and said, "In the past, you had to do drudgery enduring mistreatment and contempt under a Japanese engineer. But you are now the legitimate master of the locomotive engine. Please drive it as best as you can." She got on the engine.

The engine sounded its whistle in the quiet yard of the iron works.

"Good," she said, "have a try at driving."

The engine started to move, blowing out steam.

Kim Jong Suk spent busy days in Chongjin, in order to carry out Kim Il Sung's line of building the Party, state and armed forces. She gave lectures on current events, inspected the Chongjin Girls' Middle School, the Namgang branch of the Suwon Primary School and other schools, and went to sea with fishermen aboard their ship.

On the morning of December 14, she left for Puryong to inspect the reconstruction of the Puryong Metallurgical Works and the Komusan Cement Factory. She got on a charcoal-powered truck and arrived at Puryong at noon.

The officials of the reconstruction committee of the Puryong Metallurgical Works were ready to usher her into their office, but she said that she wanted to see the workshops first. She met the

workers who were repairing a transformer and the workers who were reconstructing the electric furnace, and encouraged them, saying that the determination to reconstruct these facilities by their own efforts and their firm confidence to do so were more important than their technical skill.

"We ourselves must reconstruct the factory damaged by the Japanese, to make it much better than the original one," she urged, "so as to demonstrate our ability."

One of the anti-Japanese revolutionary veterans who accompanied her that day recollected an event that took place after their departure from the Puryong Metallurgical Works, as follows:

"Komusan is located on the way to Hoeryong. It would not have taken a long time to go to Hoeryong by truck. So we decided to take Comrade Kim Jong Suk to Hoeryong on that occasion. We were rather excited at the thought of visiting her hometown with her.

"The truck ran fast towards Komusan as if it understood our feelings. When we came to the branch of the road that led to the Komusan Cement Factory, we stopped the vehicle, and suggested to Kim Jong Suk that we should visit the cement factory on our way back from Hoeryong. We told the driver to go straight to Hoeryong. Kim Jong Suk objected to the idea, told the driver to stop the truck, and alighted. Lost in recollection, she looked towards Hoeryong across the Musan Pass. The road and the railway stretched towards Hoeryong, and the motor vehicle could have taken her to her dear hometown, just beyond the Musan Pass.

"After a long while, she said, 'The General has put forth the line of building a new country, and is now working to realize the line, skipping meals and rest. Knowing this, how could I visit my hometown first? I must finish my work here as soon as possible, and then go to Pyongyang to safeguard the General.'

"Dismayed, we kept standing on the road without thinking of departing.

"With a smile, she said, 'Let's visit Hoeryong in the flowering season.' "

That day, she went to see the workers of the Komusan Cement Factory, without paying a visit to her hometown just around the corner.

On each of her days in Chongjin, she showed her comrades-in-arms a practical example of how they should support Kim Il Sung in his work.

On December 22, she took a train for Pyongyang. It was not a passenger train, but a freight train. The floor of one of the wagons was spread with mats and had a small stove. She was given a warm send-off at Chongjin Station.

The train was sluggish, stopping frequently because the railway was still under repair. It took eight days for it to reach Pyongyang.

Kim Jong Suk did everything she could throughout her journey to contribute to the implementation of Kim Il Sung's line of nation building.

When the train stopped first, at Myongchon Station, she talked with the senior officials of Myongchon County who came to the station to see her. She spent a long time, learning about the state of affairs in the county, the people's living conditions, and how the officials were working. She told them to become faithful servants of the people, and take good care of the people's lives and property.

The next morning, she met local women near the station, enlightening them about the new society, and urging them to get rid of the survivals of the outmoded way of life, to be faithful in the activities of the Women's Union, and to make active contribution to nation building.

When the train stopped at Kilju Station, she exchanged greetings with the people who gathered in front of the station, and made a speech, rousing them to the building of a prosperous, independent and sovereign state. In the wagon, she met the officials of the county committee of the Women's Union, explaining how they should contribute to nation building in the liberated country in line with Kim Il Sung's policy.

The next day, the 24th of December, was her birthday. She spent her birthday, to be celebrated for the first time in her own country, which had just been liberated, in the rumbling freight train. She and her companions cooked a simple meal to celebrate her birthday.

She arrived in Pyongyang on the 29th of December, two days before the end of 1945, a year when the whole country bubbled over with the joy of liberation.

JUBILATION AT MANGYONGDAE

On New Year's Day 1946, Kim Jong Suk paid a visit to Mangyongdae in company with Kim Il Sung and their son. Mangyongdae was her spiritual home, which she had never forgotten while fighting the Japanese. She had pictured Mangyongdae in her mind when singing Nostalgia, which she had learned from Kim Il Sung. She had imagined Mangyongdae while listening to Kim Il Sung's stories of the homeland by flickering camp fires at night.

Kim Il Sung's family at Mangyongdae were eagerly waiting for her as soon as the news of her arrival in Pyongyang reached them. What would she look like, the anti-Japanese war heroine who had fought under the General's command? Kim Il Sung's grandmother

had tried to imagine what her eldest granddaughter-in-law, looked like, impatiently waiting to see her and visualizing what hardships she must have suffered, fighting in the mountains. His grandfather had felt the same. Whenever he heard magpies chirping (a sign of a welcome visitor in Korean folklore--Tr.) on the ash tree in the courtyard in the early morning, he would stand on the porch, silently looking towards the open wattle gate.

Many of his family had left home through that gate, with the noble aim of saving the country. Since then, the wattle gate had been open, waiting for their return. Most of them, however, did not return. Two of his sons, his daughter-in-law, his second-eldest grandson, and many of his relations gave their lives for the cause of revolution, never to return to their dear home.

But his eldest granddaughter-in-law, who was known as a woman general in the fight against the Japanese, was now going to enter the gate with his great-grandson ahead. Grandfather was standing on the porch for a long time that day.

Kim Jong Suk, who was now on the way to Mangyongdae with Kim Il Sung and their son, was full of emotion. She pictured in her mind her grandparents-in-law and other folks whom she was going to meet for the first time.

Grandmother came out of the gate when they arrived, and hugged her great-grandson. Grandfather looked at his granddaughter-in-law and his great-grandson for a long while in irresistible excitement.

"My granddaughter-in-law has come to my home with my star-like great-grandson," he exclaimed. "Today is a red-letter day for this family." His eyes glinted with hot tears.

Grandmother and Aunt ushered Kim Jong Suk into the room. Introduced by Kim Il Sung, Kim Jong Suk bowed deeply to her grandparents-in-law. She also greeted her other relatives in turn. Aunt, who had anticipated to see a stern, extraordinary-looking heroine who had become renowned for her exploits in battles

around Mt. Paektu, was moved by her simplicity and good manner and exclaimed, "How did she learn such good manners while fighting in the mountains?"

"Nonsense!" Grandfather interrupted. "It is no wonder that a fighter for national liberation is well-mannered."

After the greetings, Kim Jong Suk led her son forward. The boy knelt and bowed deep to his great-grandparents. Grandfather embraced the boy, and stroked his face and shoulders with his knotty fingers.

"How very like our General you look!" Grandfather said. "What wonderful luck for our family to have a hero boy like you in these rough times!" Hot tears again ran down his cheeks.

A simple party was held to celebrate the occasion at Kim Il Sung's old home.

"We haven't given you a wedding party," Grandfather said. "Please regard this simple dinner as your wedding feast."

Kim Jong Suk took a bottle of liquor from her bag, filled a cup, and offered it to Grandfather. He accepted it, stroking his grey beard.

"It was not in vain that I survived troubled times," Grandfather said. "I've met my grandson, who has become a General, and today my eldest granddaughter-in-law, who looks like the full moon, and have my great-grandson on my knee, who will carry forward our family line. From this happy day, our ancestores will rest in peace. Thank you. You've made my home at Mangyongdae much brighter today." With these words, he drained the cup.

"Grandpa and Grandma," Kim Jong Suk said. "What hardships you've endured! Now that the world has become bright, please live long in good health."

"Don't mention our hardships," grandmother remarked, holding her grand-daughter-in-law's hands in hers, and stroking them. "We've lived in a warm room under our own roof. It is you who

have really suffered, sleeping in the snow, chewing grass roots, and fighting in the mountains for 15 long years."

"Grandma, you've really suffered," Kim Il Sung said, looking at her with a genial smile on his face. "You were dragged about by the Japanese police and their stooges. What a hard lot!"

"I never thought it a hard lot," Grandmother recollected. "The Japanese and their stooges dragged me here and there, pressing me to tell them where you were. But I never yielded to them. I wasn't learned, but I remained upright. When I thought of you, General, I felt strong. 'Villains,' I shouted at them. 'My grandson will punish you. However hard you may try you will never catch him.' They were scared, and dared not touch me, for fear of the guerrillas. They refrained from mistreating me any further. ... But that is all in the past. After all, we have lived to see this day; only the dead have to be grieved over." She choked with emotion, unable to say any more, wiping away her tears.

How many years it was since the death of her eldest son, who had left home with the lofty aim of winning back his lost country, and how many years since her third son had died! A long time before, she had heard that her dear daughter-in-law and her second grandson had been buried in a foreign land. Time, however long, was not a remedy for the sorrow she had to bear as a result of these tragic events.

Just as she had felt when Kim Il Sung came to visit Mangyongdae for the first time after the liberation of the country, so did she feel now, having welcomed her eldest granddaughter-in-law and her great-grandson, the yearning for her flesh and blood, who had given their lives in the patriotic cause. The grandparents and their relatives in the room all wept.

It was Kim Jong Il who brought the family back into the atmosphere of happiness from their sad memory. The boy threw himself into his mother's arms, and said, "Ma, let's come here again on a rainy day."

"Why on a rainy day?" his mother asked.

"I, too, will shin up the ash tree to catch the rainbow, as father did." These words reminded the family of Kim Il Sung's childhood, and they were excited to hear them.

When the village elders told him to sing a song, Kim Jong Il stood up without hesitation, and sang the Guerrilla March. Asked for an encore, he sang another revolutionary song. The audience gave him hearty applause.

"As a bamboo shoots up from its roots," Grandfather commented with satisfaction, "my great-grandson is destined to become a General." The family was enveloped in great happiness. The family and their neighbours sang enthusiastically. Aunt sang the Lullaby, which Kim Il Sung's mother Kang Pan Sok had often sung.

At the request of her aunt and the villagers, Kim Jong Suk sang Nostalgia. Her song left a deep impression on the audience.

The night at Mangyongdae deepened, and Kim Il Sung returned to Pyongyang. He had come to visit his old home by taking time off his tight schedule of dealing with state affairs, so he left home without staying even one night there. The neighbours also said good night. The family went to bed. Kim Jong Suk slept with her son by the grandparents.

When she opened her eyes, Kim Jong Suk found her son's bed empty. The grandparents were sitting with the boy by her head.

"You're awake," Grandmother said. "It's late. Go on sleeping."

Kim Jong Suk got up and asked,

"Grandparents, why aren't you sleeping?"

"Old people are sleepless. Don't worry about me. Have more sleep; you used to sleep with your head on rocks in the mountains, not in a comfortable bed."

Seeing that she was not going to lie down again, Grandfather said:

"You left home at a tender age, and ever since have gone through many hardships, with a determination to win back the country. When the country was under Japanese occupation, not a day passed in peace in every house, including mine, from which many went out to free the country. We spent many a long sleepless night when raindrops were trickling down from the eaves, wondering whether they were trembling in rags. Your grandmother-in-law used to turn her empty spinning wheel. When I asked why, she answered that she was fretting. But that is now an old story. You've come with my great-grandson who will link the bloodline of this family that is proud of its patriotic tradition. Adorn my family with a flower. Bring up this boy with care to inherit the bright future of the country."

Feeling the revolutionary, patriotic tradition of Kim Il Sung's family every minute of her stay at Mangyongdae, Kim Jong Suk accepted Grandfather's words as an earnest request of the Korean nation. She closed her eyes again, but she could not sleep.

The next day, she returned to Pyongyang. After that, she often visited Mangyongdae and performed her filial duty to the grandparents.

Kim Jong Suk tried hard to persuade the grandparents to stay with her in Pyongyang. In cold seasons she would obtain new warm clothes and send them to them. When she had delicious food, she thought of her grandparents.

One evening, she heard that Grandmother was ill, and hurried to Mangyongdae.

Officials suggested that she should go the following morning, because the road to Mangyongdae had become muddy due to rain the previous night and because it was too late. Nevertheless, she departed immediately.

It was already getting dark. When her car reached the fork, the branch that led to the old home was like a swamp. It was impossible to go by car any farther.

She took up the bundle of fish and fruit she had brought with her, and got down from the car. An official tried to dissuade her from venturing farther. She started walking, saying that when fighting in the mountains, she had trekked ways that were many times more rugged than the muddy causeway.

When she arrived at her destination, Grandmother said, "You've made a night journey when I'm not seriously ill. They shouldn't have let you know. I'm slightly ill now and then, so don't worry too much. The wicked Japanese were the cause of my illness. Now that they have fled, I'll be all right."

"You're right, Grandma," Kim Jong Suk consoled her, "You'll feel better, just as the country has recovered its health as a result of Japan's defeat."

Once Kim Jong Suk bought a wall clock, and took it to the old home at Mangyongdae, which could not afford to have even such a clock until that time.

Grandmother was very glad to see it, although she said it must be very expensive.

"I've wanted such a clock for a long time," grandmother said, looking at it with tears in her eyes. "You've bought it for me. When your husband's father was going to middle school, I had to guess the time to cook his breakfast. How much I wished to have one! You even understand my innermost longing."

Kim Jong Suk thought of her grandparents at Mangyongdae even when she was far away from Pyongyang. When she was visiting Mt. Kumgang in Kim Il Sung's company in September 1947, she bought a mountaineering cap for Kim Il Sung and a stick for Grandfather, although she bought nothing for herself.

Visitors to the old home at Mangyongdae nowadays can see the stick, a memento of the event, which is on exhibition in a corner of the porch of the old home.

Kim Jong Suk was so dutiful and considerate that her grandparents always waited to see her, and when she came, the family were as happy as on a festive day.

One day Grandmother asked Kim Il Sung whether he could buy her a good ladies' watch even though it was expensive. Kim Il Sung was puzzled at her, who had lived all her life without even a wall clock, all of a sudden wanting a ladies' watch, and a good one at that. He bought such a watch, and took it to her, asking what she needed it for.

"I heard," she said, "that you got married in the mountains without any fine presents or a feast. This weighs heavily on my heart. A long time has passed since you returned from the mountain, but I haven't arranged a party for you nor have I had clothes made for you. So I want to have Jong Suk wear a watch. I would be happy if she wore a watch."

Kim Jong Suk liked the watch very much. When bidding eternal farewell to her in September 1949, Kim Il Sung buckled the watch on the wrist of his most loyal comrade in the revolution.

10. ALERT AS EVER

ALWAYS A BODYGUARD

Freed from the colonial yoke of Japanese imperialism, Korea was seething with excitement and delight.

People who had been conscripted into the Japanese army or into forced labour gangs or who had been displaced within the country or abroad returned to be reunited with their dear ones in tears of happiness in all parts of the country.

After her arrival in Pyongyang, however, Kim Jong Suk made every effort without a moment's relaxation to assist Kim Il Sung in his work and ensure his personal security as she had done in the years of fighting against the Japanese.

Whenever her comrades advised her to pay a visit to Hoeryong or to find out the whereabouts of her relatives, she used to answer that although the Japanese had been driven out of the country, the Americans were occupying south Korea, and reactionaries were hatching insidious plots, that the General was working day and night, that she could not afford to leave the General instead of helping him in his work, and that she would not go to visit her relatives before the country became secure.

Guarding Kim Il Sung's personal security was especially important in view of the intensifying reactionary manoeuvres. As the framework of nation building was formed in the north and as the democratic force grew stronger, the class enemies resorted to terrorist acts at the instigation of the US imperialists. The chairman of the South Phyongan Provincial Party Committee fell a victim to the enemy's terrorism. He had joined the revolutionary organization with the help of Ri Ju Yon, who had been sent to South Phyongan Province by Kim Jong Suk before liberation. He had worked in line with Kim Il Sung's idea. The reactionary manoeuvres reached such an extent as to throw a hand-grenade at the platform of the mass rally held with Kim Il Sung's attendance in South Phyongan Province in commemoration of the 27th anniversary of the March First Popular Uprising. The terrorist attack on the home of the Rev. Kang Ryang Uk[33], who had come

out in support of the Kim Il Sung's line of nation building, was another instance.

The leadership of the Party and the revolution headed by Kim Il Sung was the main target of terrorist attack. The Guards in those days, however, were not well enough prepared to crush the enemy's manoeuvres. Kim Il Sung had sent all the veterans of the anti-Japanese armed struggle to the important posts of nation building.

When Kim Jong Suk arrived in Pyongyang, many of the Guards were young recruits. Kim Chaek welcomed her with greater delight than anyone else.

"Now that you've come, Comrade Kim Jong Suk," Kim Chaek said, greeting her, "I feel quite relieved." He was well aware that she had been strictest in safeguarding Kim Il Sung and helping him to maintain good health, and had performed this duty perfectly at any time and place.

Hearing him say that Kim Il Sung had not allowed anyone to care about his own security and his bed and board, Kim Jong Suk said, "Never mind, Comrade Kim Chaek. I'll do my best to strengthen the Guards. Still now, as was the case when fighting in the mountains, I have no more important duty than to safeguard the General."

Every morning, she met the Guards commander and Kim Il Sung's aides-de-camp, and discussed with them all the problems arising in safeguarding Kim Il Sung. When Kim Il Sung was at home, she herself became one of the Guards, and undertook guard duty.

One day in early February 1946, when Kim Il Sung was writing deep into the night the report on the establishment of the Provisional People's Committee of North Korea, the Guards who were patrolling his residence found Kim Jong Suk standing outside his room in a heavy snowfall.

When the Guards advised her to take a rest in her room, Kim Jong Suk said with a smile that it would be impossible

for her to drop the habit of standing guard, a habit she had built up when fighting in the mountains. She patrolled without a rest and stood guard without being relieved, just as she had done during the anti-Japanese armed struggle. That was her fixed habit and the first and foremost requirement of her life before it was her duty.

One day in mid-February the same year, Kim Il Sung was giving information officials instructions about radio broadcasting. Kim Jong Suk was serving tea to the officials. Suddenly rifle fire was heard nearby, and the light went out. The room became pitch-dark. The officials became confused and alarmed at the unexpected situation.

"Nothing surprising," Kim Il Sung remarked. "A few rats may be squeaking. Let's take a rest before resuming." He stood up, and turned towards the door.

Kim Jong Suk was already standing at the door with her arms stretched across it, and a Mauser in her hand.

"Don't go out, General," she said, "you must stay in."

"Don't worry. I must see what the matter is outside." Kim Il Sung said, approaching the door.

Kim Jong Suk blocked the door with her body, warning, "You mustn't on any account. The Guards want you to stay in."

The officials saw in her not the gentle and genial lady serving tea a short while before, but the heroine from Mt. Paektu, Kim Il Sung's bodyguard who, with a Mauser in hand, was peering through the darkness. At this moment, she was literally a fortress guarding Kim Il Sung's security.

Ho Jong Suk, who witnessed the scene that day, recollected, "The scene was never-to-be-forgotten. No famous artist in the world would be able to give a lifelike description of her unconquerable demeanour guarding the great leader that day."

The gunshots came from a clash between the terrorists of the Huimangdan of Jo Man Sik[34], who had crept in to harm the

leadership of the Korean revolution, and the men of the Public Security Service, who had been patrolling the area.

Kim Jong Suk protected Kim Il Sung at the risk of her own life as his constant bodyguard, teaching and leading the Guards. She told the Guards to devote themselves, body and soul, to protecting Kim Il Sung, just as the anti-Japanese revolutionary fighters had done.

She directed her efforts to helping their political study, saying that the Guards should be equipped with Kim Il Sung's ideas, and better politically prepared than anyone else. Every morning, she read the Party paper, marking off important articles, and gave them to the Guards commander for use in reading sessions. Since the Party paper carried Kim Il Sung's line and policy for each period and current events at home and abroad, she said, it would be impossible to know Kim Il Sung's ideas and intentions and play their role of revolutionary fighters unless they read it. As a result, the Guards conducted systematic education with the aid of the Party paper and other publications.

If the Guards were ignorant of Party policy, she said, they would act contrary to Party policy however loyal they might try to be to the Party.

Kim Jong Suk belonged to the Party cell of the Guards, setting an example of Party life and leading them to follow her example.

In September 1946, immediately after the conference marking the founding of the Workers' Party of North Korea was held, Partywide talks were organized in preparation for the issuing of new membership cards. The Party cell of the Guards, however, did not organize a talk, assuming that they would not need it because they were under the guidance of Kim Jong Suk. The officials of higher Party organizations had the same idea.

Kim Jong Suk said that there could be no special member in the Party, that they should lead Party life better than anyone else because they were Party members who were working by

Kim Il Sung's side, and that when she was fighting in the mountains, the Guards of Headquarters had always been exemplary in Party life.

The next day, she and other members of the Party cell visited the higher Party organization and took the lead in participating in the talks.

The Guardsmen became well-qualified for their duty under her guidance, cherishing in their hearts her image of ardent and loyal devotion to Kim Il Sung, and regarding it as the paragon of a loyal soldier and as the mirror of their behaviour.

One day in early April 1962, helping Guardsmen tend the flowerbed by a road that Kim Il Sung frequently used, Kim Jong Il said in recollection:

"My mother transplanted several thyme shoots outside the window of the leader's room one day after liberation. At that time, people said that thyme did not transplant easily, but Mother tended the plants with all her care until they flowered. Whenever the leader felt tired while working through the night, he would open the window and smell their fragrance."

When Kim Jong Suk was transplanting the plants, Guardsmen helped her. They wondered why she was digging up the plants she had been tending with all her care, all the more because people had said that they did not transplant easily. They wondered where she was going to transplant them, as they were well within sight from anywhere in the garden, especially from Kim Il Sung's room. Mopping her sweating brow, Kim Jong Suk said that the original flowerbed was a little too far from the General's room, and that she had noticed that the fragrance of the plants was usually swept away elsewhere by the wind, instead of flowing into his room.

The guardsmen were also deeply impressed by Kim Jong Suk, who never failed to wait for Kim Il Sung at the gates on rainy days and hold an umbrella for him when he was getting out of his car.

When Kim Il Sung was at home, she made every effort to keep the place quiet, even telling the Guardsmen to walk quietly, chopping firewood at a remote corner of the garden, and waving a stick at flocks of warbling birds in the early morning when Kim Il Sung was sleeping.

When the time for Kim Il Sung to go out or come in was approaching, she used to sweep again the road he would use, although it was already clean; when he was going on a long journey, she got information from the weather station, learned about the road conditions on the way to his destination, gave his bodyguards necessary instructions, and prepared his travel kit well enough to ensure a safe journey for him.

Everything she did was an example of the correct attitude to Kim Il Sung and unfailing loyalty to him, an example to be followed by the Guardsmen.

Kim Jong Suk attached special importance to improving the Guardsmen's marksmanship. She said that if a guardsman failed to hit his target at the first shot, his rifle was no more use than a stick or a stone, and helped all the Guardsmen to become crack shots.

One day in the autumn of 1946, while inspecting the Guards' marksmanship training, she noticed that a platoon was lagging behind. She found that the platoon leader was not efficient in directing the training.

If she herself had helped the platoon's training for several days, she could have greatly improved all the men's marksmanship. But she thought it necessary to improve the platoon leader's skill, so that he would be efficient in directing the marksmanship training for recruits to be assigned to the platoon. The next day, she went to the firing range with the platoon leader. She checked the performance of his pistol, and shot at a target at a distance of 30 metres. She hit the target at the first shot.

Handing the pistol back to the platoon leader, she told him to have a try at the target. He had had pistol practice several times,

but mostly failed to hit the target at all. He hit the fringe of the target at the second shot.

She taught him her way of shooting, correcting his manner of shooting, and got him to familiarize himself with the skill. With her help, he improved his marksmanship quickly day by day.

To be a qualified platoon leader, she said, he must master different kinds of weapons. She taught him machine-gun practice, and helped him to acquire the skill of hitting transitory targets and moving targets, as well as invisible targets, judging the direction of their sounds. In step with the development of the platoon leader's marksmanship, his men's skill improved quickly.

Sounds have pitch and length, she said to the Guardsmen, just as songs have time and bars. She told the Guardsmen to be familiar with the sounds that might help them to identify the General, such as the sound of the engine of his car, the sound of his steps, the sound of his opening and closing the door, the sound of his cough, and so on. She emphasized that since judgement by sound was especially important at night, they must develop the ability to distinguish between different sounds at night, such as the rustling of trees, the sounds of insects and birds, the sound of dew drops rolling, and so on. Only then would they be able to identify a strange sound and take prompt action. This was all valuable experience Kim Jong Suk had gained while guarding Kim Il Sung in the forests of Mt. Paektu and on the plains of Manchuria. This experience helped the Guardsmen in developing their ability to judge a variety of signs.

Kim Jong Suk made sure that the Guardsmen strictly observed the regulations and manuals, and that they acquired the quality of a crack unit through repeated drills. She demanded that they keep strictly to the Guards regulations in particular, and set a personal example in this regard.

One day, on her way back from an outing, she was stopped by an unfamiliar officer at the gate of her residence. The officer had

been newly appointed to the Guards and was inspecting how the sentries at the gates were performing their duty. He asked her what she was coming to the residence for, and she, with a faint smile, answered that she lived there. The officer, who had never expected a woman in such simple clothing to be the mistress of the residence, said that he must make sure, hurrying inside even before the sentry had time to tell him who she was. In a few minutes, he came out in great embarrassment.

"Well done," Kim Jong Suk praised him. "The General's Guardsmen must observe the regulations as strictly as this officer has done." She saw that his example was followed by the men.

One day, Kim Jong Suk, who paid close attention to the attire of the Guardsmen, took the collars from their uniforms, and washed them for them while they were sleeping.

To the men, who looked ashamed, she said, "If you were at home, your mothers and sisters would do such things for you, but here it may be a nuisance to do it yourselves."

"The Women's Union may be ordered out to do such a thing without difficulty," she went on. "But soldiers must know how to do washing, sewing, cooking and everything else by themselves. Only then will they be able to cope with every situation."

Kim Jong Suk taught the men how to sew their collars on. On rainy days, she pitched a small tent over the guard post, and on cold winter days she prepared heated stones for the sentries to stand on.

Under her warm care, the young Guards immediately after liberation grew up into a crack unit which was well prepared politico-ideologically and militarily, and strictly disciplined.

Kim Il Sung expressed satisfaction at the development of the Guards, got the senior officials of the Pyongyang Institute and all the other training centres to pay an educational visit to the Guards, and ensured that its example was followed by the military academy and other training units.

Officials who saw the Guards performing their duties admired them. Kim Chaek and other anti-Japanese revolutionary veterans were grateful to Kim Jong Suk for her efforts to build up the Guards to protect the leadership of the revolution.

The experience of the Guards served as the basis for completing the internal regulations and manual of the Korean People's Army, and the Guards set an example to be followed by the regular revolutionary armed forces when they were organized later.

Kim Jong Suk made every effort to help Kim Il Sung maintain good health, to ensure a balanced diet for him, who insisted on the same diet as the people had, to replace the lamp-shade of his special train on a trip to field guidance with one with a peach-coloured shade to alleviate his eye-strain, to get the road and bridges repaired after checking the route of his field guidance in advance, and so on. She did everything for his good health, safety and security.

One day, when making preparations for the decisive battle to liberate the country, Kim Il Sung dreamed that he was sitting in a study filled with books. The anti-Japanese revolutionary fighters who heard of his dream said in delight that the dream was the sign of his becoming the president of the country. A long time passed, and the veterans and Kim Il Sung himself forgot the story of the dream. Kim Jong Suk, however, did not forget it.

In April 1947, Kim Jong Suk arranged Kim Il Sung's study with all her care. She carefully chose his desk and other items of furniture to be of suitable sizes. She neatly classified the books and arranged them in the bookshelves so as to be convenient for use. She also arranged newspapers, magazines and documents in good order.

Inspecting the study, Kim Il Sung was satisfied, saying that the study was well arranged, that the books were well classified, and that the newspapers and magazines were conveniently placed. He

had been a devoted reader even in the years of the anti-Japanese armed struggle. Shortly after the liberation of the country, he met Meretskov, Commander of the Maritime Territory Military District of the Soviet Union at Lushun. Hearing from him that he had many books confiscated from the Japanese, Kim Il Sung sent an airplane twice to bring the books and sent them for use at the university to be newly established.

When his study was arranged, Kim Il Sung posed with Kim Jong Suk in it for a photograph.

What Kim Jong Suk said when she went to Mt. Kumgang in Kangwon Province in Kim Il Sung's company is widely known to the Korean people.

Because she had to look after the preparation of his supper, she climbed down the mountain without proceeding up to the Peak of Ten Thousand Forms, which was at a short distance. The next day, September 28, she turned back at the spot from which Kuryong Falls was within hailing distance.

"As the saying goes, 'A man enraptured at a fascinating event fails to notice his axe handle rotting,'" she said. "I've failed to notice the time passing, enraptured at the scenic beauty of Mt. Kumgang. It's time to prepare the General's meal. I nearly forgot to do it."

To the official who suggested that she climb up the mountain to enjoy the scenic beauty for a short while, she remarked, "The General is going to leave again for field guidance in the afternoon. So I must go down to prepare his lunch and his journey."

When visiting Kuryong Falls again later, Kim Il Sung said in emotional recollection: "When we came to Mt. Kumgang in 1947, Kim Jong Suk came up just to there, but went back without seeing the falls in order to prepare my lunch. When I urged her to come up to see the falls, she went down, saying that she would see them the next time, but never saw them in her lifetime."

Safeguarding General Kim Il Sung, who was regarded as the saviour and future of the nation ever since the beginning of the Juche revolutionary cause, was the supreme national task put on her by history.

IMMORTAL PAEAN

The Korean people, who were leading a new life with the joy of liberation, were eager to sing a song about the achievements of General Kim Il Sung, who had liberated them, and to convey the song to posterity.

One day in May 1946, Kim Chaek went to see Kim Jong Suk, who was tending vegetables in her garden.

"I've come to see you to discuss an urgent matter," Kim Chaek said, producing a thick bundle of letters from his briefcase. The letters were written in brush, pen or pencil; they contained the unanimous desire of the Korean people to have a song of General Kim Il Sung composed.

Kim Chaek had given poet Ri Chan an assignment to write a song about the General. Kim Jong Suk said that she knew of the poet, and that she had read his poems that had been carried in a newspaper. That ardent and talented poet, she commented, would be able to write a good song about the General.

Kim Chaek said that if the General knew about this, he might scold him.

At the dawn of the Korean revolution, Kim Il Sung's comrades-in-arms had composed and sung the revolutionary paean, The Star of Korea, out of respect for him. After that, however, no more paeans were composed.

During the anti-Japanese armed struggle, the soldiers of the KPRA were eager to compose a paean about Kim Il Sung. Kim Il Sung, however, sternly forbade the composition of such a song whenever they attempted it.

Kim Jong Suk said that a song of General Kim Il Sung must be composed, that the song must praise his achievements, and that it must be worked out excellently so that it would be sung by the Korean people for ever down through generations.

After that, Kim Jong Suk inquired now and then through Kim Chaek how the composition work was proceeding.

Once, hearing from him how the song was being created, she said that the poet, who had had no experience of the revolutionary struggle against the Japanese, would find it difficult to write the song about Kim Il Sung. She sent to the poet her notebook, which contained over 100 revolutionary songs, including ones created by Kim Il Sung himself. In that notebook she had written down the songs one by one during the anti-Japanese revolutionary struggle.

When the song was drafted, the poet suggested to Kim Chaek that he would like to show the words of the song to Kim Jong Suk, and get her advice.

Hearing of this from Kim Chaek, she called the poet to her. Giving him an account of the anti-Japanese armed struggle under Kim Il Sung's command, she said:

"The noble footprints of the General, who devoted himself to the cause of the country's independence and the people's happiness, can be found everywhere in the country. His footsteps are printed on the rugged range of Mt. Paektu and on the bends of the Amnok and Tuman rivers, as well as on the flower gardens of this liberated country.

"When trekking through the Manchurian plains in the biting wind, and when spending long, long wakeful nights by the camp fires in the secret camps, we firmly believed that the day would

come when we would talk about the General's great love for the country and the people as if telling an old tale. ...

"The General's imperishable achievements in the revolution will shine with his noble name for ever in our people's minds."

Her words lit up the thought of the revolutionary paean and sounded its rhythm for which the poet was racking his brains. The words of the revolutionary paean were completed in this manner in Korea after liberation. The text of the song was disseminated immediately through newspapers and magazines and set to music by a young composer, Kim Won Gyun.

Song of General Kim Il Sung quickly spread among the people throughout the country, and resounded in all parts of the motherland, which was bubbling over with the creation of a new life.

Song of General Kim Il Sung has become an immortal paean, a song of loyalty, that encouraged the Korean people in the struggle to build a new democratic Korea, during the Fatherland Liberation War, in the years of postwar reconstruction and the construction of socialism, in the whole period of the Juche revolutionary cause.

Kim Jong Suk also gave energetic guidance to the work of erecting Kim Il Sung's bronze statue to ensure that the Korean people would live always looking up at his image.

On August 10, 1947, she paid a visit to Mangyongdae Revolutionary School which was then located at Kan-ri. Talking to the schoolchildren, she said that although their life might be a little inconvenient at the moment, they would be able to learn free from any inconvenience when the new modern school buildingwhich was under construction at Mangyongdae in accordance with the General's plan was completed.

The schoolchildren jumped up and down in delight, saying that they would like to move to Mangyongdae as soon as possible.

Looking round at the anti-Japanese veterans and officials who accompanied her, Kim Jong Suk said:

"Let us erect the General's bronze statue at Mangyongdae Revolutionary School, so that the schoolchildren will live always looking up at the General's image. ...

"Let's have the General's bronze statue erected. The spot in front of the main school building will be the best site for the bronze statue. There, the children will be able to look up at the General's bronze statue, and their wish to have the General always with them will come true."

Kim Chaek and other anti-Japanese revolutionary veterans gladly agreed to her idea.

Kim Jong Suk said that if the General's bronze statue was located in front of the main school building, from where the Taedong River and Mangyong Peak could be seen at a glance, the schoolchildren will be able to see the bronze statue from the river, as well as the peak and other parts of the surrounding area.

Back at home, Kim Jong Suk gave deep thought to how the statue should be interpreted,as the first of its kind to be erected in Korea. She looked for experts in the creation of bronze statues. When the experts got together, she told them that the statue must be modelled on the General in the years of his anti-Japanese armed struggle. She also dwelt on how the statue should be interpreted.

On October 24, 1948, the ceremony of unveiling the bronze statue of General Kim Il Sung erected at Mangyongdae Revolutionary School was held simultaneously with the ceremony of the completion of the school's construction.

Since then, bronze statues of Kim Il Sung have been erected in many places in Korea to meet the wishes of the entire Korean people.

11. FOR THE REHABILITATION OF THE COUNTRY

IN SUPPORT OF THE LINE ADVANCED BY KIM IL SUNG

Immediately after its liberation the situation prevailing in Korea was very complicated. The US imperialists, occupying south Korea, made desperate attempts to frustrate the struggle of the Korean people to build a new country. At the same time, the

class enemies, at the instigation of the US imperialists, attempted to lead the people along the reactionary road. To make matters worse, the factionalists and opportunists, leftist and rightist, under the cloak of being "revolutionaries", claimed that a bourgeois republic should be established or a socialist revolution should be launched at once. This plunged the people into confusion.

Kim Jong Suk told the anti-Japanese revolutionary veterans who were working in the provinces that they should carry through the line of General Kim Il Sung on founding the Party, the state and the army, frustrating the manoeuvrings of the betrayers of the revolution and factionalists, as they had done when fighting in the mountains.

Her instruction was the guideline to be adhered to constantly in the then complex situation.

Success in the building of a new country after liberation depended on the development of the newly-founded Party and on its role.

Wherever Kim Jong Suk went, she helped the Party organizations to work in line with the revolutionary idea of Kim Il Sung.

One December day in 1945 she visited the Chongjin City Party Committee. There she learned that the officials of the Party committee were at a loss what to do and how to apply the line of building Party organizations, and experiencing difficulties for lack of core elements.

Saying that there had been many underground revolutionary organizations in North Hamgyong Province under the direct influence of the anti-Japanese armed struggle and a great number of people had fought for the liberation of the country with a self-sacrificing spirit, she advised the officials of the committee to search out these people, and train them as core elements. Reminding the officials of the speech Kim Il Sung had made at the inaugural conference for the founding of the Party on building

the Party into a mass party firmly standing on the foundation of the working class, she emphasized that excellent people should be admitted into the Party from among the workers, peasants and other strata of the masses, and Party organizations be formed as quickly as possible in the iron works and in other factories and enterprises in the province.

Afterwards, she visited several Party organizations in other provinces, pointing out the mistakes in their work, teaching them how to work, and leading them to carry out the line of Party building set forth by Kim Il Sung.

Kim Jong Suk also directed a large part of her efforts to the work with youth organizations. Leading the youth movement in Korea to be conducted in accordance with the line advanced by Kim Il Sung was a key to strengthening the Party and the motive force of the Korean revolution.

In those days, the liberation of the country made the hearts of the young people burn with ardor. But they did not know which road they should follow and where they should devote their passion.

After liberation, YCL organizations were formed across the country, but they enrolled only proletarian youths, whose number was limited. Along with them, youth organizations of various hues like the Liberated Youth League, Students Union, White-clad Youth League, Young Men's Christian Association and Young Chondoist League were vying with each other for members.

Learning of the situation of the youth movement created after liberation, Kim Il Sung raised the slogan, "Patriotic young people, unite under the banner of democracy," and set forth the policy of founding the DYL, a single mass youth organization involving young people of all walks of life.

However, anti-Party factionalists were adamant in their opposition to the founding of the DYL, claiming that restructuring the YCL into the DYL was "retrogression" and "turning to the

rightist course" of the youth movement. Some of them went so far as to lead meetings for founding DYL organizations to adopt resolutions on maintaining the YCL organizations as they were.

At the Third Enlarged Executive Meeting of the Central Organizing Committee of the Party, Kim Il Sung severely criticized the factionalists for their subversive schemes harmful to the founding of the DYL and took measures for founding that organization without delay.

On January 17, 1946, Kim Il Sung convened the conference of the representatives of the democratic youth organizations in north Korea and made public the founding of the Democratic Youth League of North Korea.

Talking with representatives of the young people until late at night that day, Kim Jong Suk instilled confidence and courage in their hearts.

Even after the lapse of scores of years since then, the representatives still recollect the following words she said in those days:

"General Kim Il Sung said the youth are pillars in the building of a new democratic Korea.

"Having started his revolutionary struggle with the work among the youth, he hopes that young people will undertake the major share in the building of a new country, as they did in the bloody struggle for the restoration of the country.

"In support of his line on building a new country, you should go to factories, rural communities, schools and all other places where there are young people to implant in them the noble ideas of the General, and rally them solidly around the DYL organizations."

As soon as the DYL was founded, a great number of young people joined it.

Kim Jong Suk led the DYL to fulfil its mission as a true young vanguard and a transmission belt of the Party in carrying out the latter's policies.

When some students, deceived by the enemy's propaganda, came out against the Party's policy and even staged a strike in a school in Pyongyang, Kim Jong Suk saw to it that a public lecture was organized without delay for young people and students in the city. That day, she took the floor and disclosed the essence of the enemy's propaganda, and awakened the young people to their mission, before concluding the lecture with the following words:

"If you do not want to become slaves of the imperialists again, and if you heartily wish our country to be a truly independent state, you must follow General Kim Il Sung.

"You, students, must study, study and study for the building of a new democratic Korea.

"There is only one road you must follow: the road of democracy indicated by General Kim Il Sung."

The audience gave her a thunderous applause, shouting, "Long live General Kim Il Sung!"

Thanks to her activities, the DYL became able to perform satisfactorily its mission as the true young vanguard of the Party, as intended by Kim Il Sung, and the youth position of the Party was further intensified.

Kim Jong Suk devoted all her energies to carrying out the policy of Kim Il Sung on nation building.

The factionalists and a number of wastrels, in concert with the US imperialists who were scheming to check the establishment of the people's government, claimed that a pro-US "bourgeois republic" or a "proletarian dictatorship government" should be established, thus laying obstacles to establishing a true government for the people.

Pro-Japanese elements and traitors to the nation who had found their way into the local organs of power resorted to every scheme to harm the prestige of the people's power organs.

Meeting with the officials of the Chongjin City People's Committee some days after returning to the homeland, Kim Jong Suk said that what type of power should be set up in the liberated country was a very important matter that had a bearing on the destiny of the nation. She stressed that the theory of "bourgeois republic" and "government of proletarian dictatorship" much advocated by some people was a sophistry espoused by those who were ignorant of the character and tasks of the Korean revolution.

Explaining that Kim Il Sung had advanced the policy of establishing a people's democratic republic that would conform with the concrete realities of Korea and satisfy the people's demand, she encouraged the officials to work positively to put this policy into effect.

When she went to Yangdok, Junghwa and other places, she got acquainted with the work of the local people's committees, and led the officials in the power organs to work as befits true servants of the people.

One May day in 1946, Kim Il Sung, in company with Kim Jong Suk, visited the Junghwa County People's Committee. Kim Il Sung asked the officials of the committee about the actual situation of the rural communities in the county. The officials failed to give him a correct answer. That day, Kim Jong Suk met the officials separately, and explained the ways for them to work better in accordance with Kim Il Sung's instructions, saying that whereas the county administration in the days of the Japanese imperialist rule had been an organ that had ruled the people in a bureaucratic and tyrannical way, the county people's committee of today was a genuine people's organ that should staunchly defend the interests of the people.

On February 8, 1946, the Provisional People's Committee of North Korea (PPCNK), the central organ of state power, was established, and Kim Il Sung was acclaimed Chairman of the PPCNK.

With the establishment of the PPCNK, the reactionaries resorted to more sinister schemes.

Kim Jong Suk did everything to frustrate their schemes, at great personal risk.

Some days after the establishment of the PPCNK, a public lecture on the event, held in the hall of Pyongyang Girls' Middle School No. 4, miscarried.

While the lecture was going on, a man stood up and asked the lecturer if the establishment of the provisional people's committee only in north Korea in the circumstances that a unified government was yet to be set up would make the country divided, and if the PPCNK was unilateral because the government for the masses of the workers and peasants would exclude capitalists and men of commerce.

As the lecturer, embarrassed, failed to give an answer, the reactionaries put up a fuss, scattering handbills and shouting that they could not support such an uncertain government, and they demanded a pan-national government.

On hearing that the lecture had stopped halfway, Kim Jong Suk told the officials to organize a lecture again at the hall, and that she herself would take the floor.

The officials said they would, but asked her not to appear in the hall as they could not foresee what the reactionaries, driven to desperation, would do.

Saying that it would be improper for her to give up the important work of implanting in the hearts of the masses General Kim Il Sung's line of building the country in fear of her personal safety, she insisted that they arrange the lecture.

On the day of the lecture, the lecture hall was filled beyond capacity by the people who came hearing the news that Kim Jong Suk was to speak.

"Fellow countrymen! A few days ago, we celebrated the establishment of the PPCNK. As they have taken power in their hands, our people greeted this auspicious event with a great joy."

Kim Jong Suk started the lecture with the impressive explanation that the Korean people came to have their own genuine power organ thanks to General Kim Il Sung, the sagacious leader of the nation, who had organized and led to victory the 20-year-long arduous anti-Japanese revolutionary struggle and conducted energetic activities after the liberation of the country to establish the government. She then made it clear that the PPCNK set up under Kim Il Sung's leadership was truly a people's power organ that rooted deep in the masses of the people and conducted its activities in accordance with their will and defended their interests, a power organ quite different from the past Japanese ruling machine that had exploited the people.

She went on to say that the PPCNK would never hinder the establishment of a unified government but rather speed up the process by laying solid foundations for its establishment. She further clarified that the PPCNK was a government organ based on a united front of people from all walks of life, including workers, peasants, national capitalists of conscience and religious believers, and it rejected only the national traitors and comprador capitalists who had collaborated with the Japanese imperialists.

From the beginning, the lecture gripped the hearts of the audience.

She continued:

"We know that a handful of reactionaries scattered subversive handbills when a lecture was going on in this hall a few days ago. Those rogues were against the setting up of the PPCNK.

"But, as you know, the PPCNK was established, and the people warmly welcome it.

"What does this stark reality show?

"It shows too clearly that no amount of frenzied endeavour on the part of the enemies of the people can repress the people's desire for justice, nor can it stop the advancing wheel of history."

She noted that the PPCNK would soon enforce various democratic reforms, thus realizing the centuries-old desire of the workers and peasants, and an unprecedent change would take place in this land. She further called on the audience to staunchly defend the people's power rallied behind Kim Il Sung, and rise as one for the building of a new country.

She had to stop the lecture from time to time because of the bursts of applause. When she concluded the lecture, the audience shouted the slogans, "Long live General Kim Il Sung!" "Long live the Provisional People's Committee of North Korea!" and "Let's become fighters of a new country who lay the foundations of democracy true to the line of General Kim Il Sung!"

That day, reactionaries again stole into the lecture hall to disrupt the lecture, but, overpowered by Kim Jong Suk's logic, and the soaring spirit of the audience, they ran away.

That day's lecture proved an important occasion for condemning the crimes of the reactionaries and bringing the validity of the line of the people's power home to the people, so as to rouse them to the building of a new country.

Kim Il Sung proclaimed the laws on agrarian reform, on the nationalization of major industries, on labour and on sex equality, and carried them out, signaling the start of the history of a great change. Recorded in the annals of this history are the devoted efforts Kim Jong Suk made and her imperishable achievements.

In the days of the agrarian reform, Kim Jong Suk visited rural villages in order to call peasants to the struggle to expose and

frustrate the schemes of landlords and other reactionaries, and carry through Kim Il Sung's policy of agrarian reform.

One February day in 1946, with the agrarian reform some days ahead, she went to Sinhung-ri, Kophyong Sub-county, Taedong County, and explained to the village women the policy on agrarian reform, while helping them in their work.

The women opened their hearts to her.

They asked her: "Rumour has it that General Kim Il Sung intends to deprive the landlords of their land and distribute it to the peasants. Is it true? Will land be given to us who have nothing? There is a rumor that one must pay compensation for the land to be distributed, so how much will one hectare of land cost? Will the landlords give up their lands for nothing?"

Kim Jong Suk explained in simple language that Kim Il Sung would soon distribute land among the peasants without fail, to meet their desire, that it was a sinister rumour set afloat by bad elements that one would have to pay for one's land, and that if all the peasants, hand in hand with the workers, fought the handful of landlords, the landlords could not help but give up their land. In this way, she educated them to be the executors of the agrarian reform.

The successful agrarian reform satisfied the long-cherished desire of the peasants.

The reactionaries, however, did not cease their subversive acts.

One day, Kim Jong Suk went to a village in Taedong County.

Sowing seeds with the peasants, she talked with them.

The peasants expressed their joy and emotion after being given land. A peasant asked her if the rumour was true that they would have to give up the lands distributed to them.

Telling them that it was a rumor spread by landlords who had been deprived of their land, she said, "The peasants have become the eternal masters of the land. Nobody will dispossess them of it."

She continued: The landlords who were deprived of their land are resorting to every conceivable scheme; they spread the rumours that the land would not be the peasants' for good, and, when a "unified government" is set up, they will have to give it up. The dastards even commit such crimes as murdering steadfast rural officials and hard-core Party members. In this situation, you must unite more firmly around General Kim Il Sung, so as to defend the land he has given you. And you must do farm work all the better for the laying of the foundations for nation building.

By frustrating the machinations of the reactionaries and awakening the peasants who had been vacillating and losing faith, she encouraged them to join in the building of a new country.

Kim Jong Suk worked hard to frustrate the moves of the class enemies of all hues who tried to sabotage the nationalization of major industries.

In those days reactionary elements spread rumours that all private factories, big and small, would be confiscated if the law on the nationalization of industries was enforced. Taking the rumours to be true, some businessmen began to sell off their machinery.

In order to rectify this situation, Kim Jong Suk met several small and medium entrepreneurs in Pyongyang, and explained the essence and correctness of the nationalization policy, and helped them to understand that the measure would not infringe upon their interests, but rather ensure their free business activities.

Thus, the evil schemes of the reactionaries aimed at separating the small and medium businessmen from the democratic forces and disrupting the nationalization of industries were frustrated.

On August 10, 1946, the Law on Nationalization of Industries, Transport, Communications, Banks and So On was proclaimed.

The enforcement of the law, together with the Labour Law, freed the workers, once exploited and oppressed, from the yoke of slavery, and enabled them to enjoy genuine freedom and equality as masters of factories and the country.

In addition, the Law on Sex Equality was proclaimed, the policies of putting judicial organs, prosecutor's offices, education and culture on a democratic basis were pursued, and measures were taken to solve the problem of national cadres and intellectuals.

The successful execution under Kim Il Sung's leadership of the tasks of the anti-imperialist, anti-feudal democratic revolution further consolidated the people's power.

In February 1947, the People's Committee of North Korea was established, and the Korean revolution entered the period of transition to socialism.

Kim Jong Suk saw that a long road still lay ahead for the accomplishment of Kim Il Sung's line of nation building, and the cause would be achieved only when a nationwide unified government was set up, and worked to this end.

After the Joint Conference of Representatives of Political Parties and Public Organizations in North and South Korea in 1948, a nationwide struggle was waged to frustrate the separatist schemes of the US imperialists and Syngman Rhee puppet clique, and to achieve the independent reunification of the country.

In May of the same year the US imperialists cooked up a "government" in south Korea by organizing separate "elections" and doctoring the results of the "elections", thus manufacturing a puppet regime.

On June 29, Kim Il Sung called a consultative meeting of the leaders of political parties and public organizations in north and south Korea, and proposed the establishment of a nationwide government by executing the political line of the Party on setting up a democratic people's republic without delay.

Kim Jong Suk gave active help to the work of drafting the Constitution of the Republic, and formulating the national flag and emblem.

She read in advance the materials, documents and reference books which Kim Il Sung would read at home, selecting necessary contents and underlining themes; she would make notes of some data, and report them to him.

One day, the director of the Information Bureau of the People's Committee of North Korea came to see Kim Jong Suk and asked her for advice on the design of the national emblem and flag.

Kim Jong Suk said to her:

"Our national emblem and flag should be designed so that they will not only be accepted by the Korean people both in the north and the south, but also reflect General Kim Il Sung's far-reaching idea and policy of building a new country. He said that the background of the national flag should be red, symbolizing the blood the fighters shed for the freedom and independence of the country and the revolutionary forces rallied around our Party. He added that a red star and rays of light should be placed in the upper part of the national emblem symbolizing the bright future of our country and the revolutionary traditions the Republic would inherit."

She stressed again that they must never neglect the task of including in the designs of the national flag and emblem a star symbolizing the revolutionary traditions of the Party and the bright future of the country.

The anti-Party, counterrevolutionary factionalists insisted that a plough, not a star, should be drawn in the circle of the national flag claiming the sustenance of the "characteristics of Korea". Kim Jong Suk's instruction to the director of the Information Bureau on Kim Il Sung's idea was a blow to this insistence.

On the drafting of the national emblem, Kim Il Sung said that the emblem should reflect electrification, adding that he was not satisfied with the blast furnace in the draft. Kim Jong Suk told him

that electrification could be portrayed if a power plant was drawn in it. Kim Il Sung agreed with her opinion with satisfaction.

In this way, the designs of the present flag and emblem of the DPRK were completed.

In the days before and after the founding of the Republic, Kim Jong Suk exerted herself to build revolutionary literature and art that would truly serve the people.

She helped the production of the drama Mt. Paektu and works of cinematic art, including My Home Village, the first feature film that represents the anti-Japanese armed struggle. When the students at the Pyongyang Girls' Middle School No. 4 were preparing for a performance, she led them to perform The Maypole, a song-and-dance work the CC members used to stage in the guerrilla zones during the anti-Japanese armed struggle, teaching the students the movement patterns of the dance and musical melodies.

Even in the dire situation prevailing in the country at that time, Kim Il Sung saw to it that hospitals and sanatoriums were built in several parts of the country, and at the same time led the work of building in Pyongyang a modern general hospital which would treat the diseases that could not be treated in other hospitals and give technical assistance to them.

On the 10th of March, 1948, Kim Il Sung, in company with Kim Jong Suk, went to Taesin-ri, East District, Pyongyang, to fix the site of the central general hospital (the present-day Korean Red Cross General Hospital).

Some days previously, Kim Il Sung had asked a medical official over dinner at his home whether he had in mind a site for the central general hospital. When the official had failed to give him an answer, Kim Jong Suk, who had been present, had told Kim Il Sung that she had been to various places, and she had thought the empty area beside the East Pyongyang Racecourse would be best for the site.

So, that day Kim Il Sung went there with Kim Jong Suk as well as Kim Chaek, Ri Yong and other officials. Kim Jong Suk explained that the area was wide, quiet, not polluted and easy of access, adding that it was most suitable for the big hospital.

Kim Il Sung was satisfied with her explanation, and fixed the site for the hospital.

From the days of laying the foundation of the hospital, Kim Jong Suk went to the building site several times, helping the construction enterprise to solve the problems of transport and building materials supply, and other problems facing the enterprise, as well as the problem of training skilled builders through an intensive course. She also showed concern for supply service to the builders.

In early April the following year, she visited the construction site again. By that time, the building of the hospital had been finished, and the laying out of its interior was in full swing.

After studying the process of construction, she pointed out that 400 rooms would be enough for all the departments that could treat various diseases.

She stressed that, along with other departments, the department of pediatrics and the department of obstetrics and gynecology should be laid out well. And she continued:

"With the liberation of the country, women, who account for half of the population, are now taking part in social life, enjoying the same rights as men. But many of them suffer from gynecological diseases. So the pediatric and gynecological department should be furnished well. Korean women are very shy of consulting men doctors. So, it would be advisable to train more women gynecologists."

On the 19th of August, 1949, the Minister of Health called at Kim Jong Suk's house to see her when she was ill in bed.

Not caring for her own health, she inquired into why the inauguration ceremony of the general hospital scheduled for the

15th of August had been postponed. And she asked him to go to the hospital with her.

Arriving at the hospital, she praised its majestic appearance, and said to the minister of health: "Now we can say proudly that we, too, have a big hospital."

She looked round the hospital, giving her opinions on how to arrange the departments and the wards, and how to solve the problems facing the hospital before its inauguration.

And she encouraged the officials as follows: "Today we have built a big hospital. In the future we will build modern hospitals everywhere in the country with this hospital as the parent body."

It was Kim Jong Suk's earnest desire to enable the Korean people to lead a healthy and happy life under the most advanced and popular medical system.

Kim Jong Suk also showed great concern so that the mass media, including the Party's paper, were edited in accordance with the demands of the Korean revolution.

On April 14, 1946, she met a member of the editorial staff of the Party's paper. She said to him, "The editing of the newspaper of the Party has made a remarkable advance, but it still carries too many articles on other countries. The Party's paper must report on our own things in the main. It is the ideological weapon of the Party for carrying out the Korean revolution, isn't it? We should approach all the problems from the point of view of making our revolution well, and subordinate them to it."

She paid deep attention to ensuring that the mass media firmly maintained the line of the working class.

As seen above, in the days of founding the Party and building the country Kim Jong Suk concerned herself with most sectors.

On September 9, 1948, Kim Il Sung, arriving home after proclaiming the founding of the DPRK to the whole world, called Kim Jong Suk to the dining table, and offered her a glass of wine, saying, "The three tasks of building the Party, the state and the

army have been completed today. All these years you have taken so much trouble to look after me. But so far I have done nothing for you. I have only given you trouble. Today I wish to offer you a glass of wine."

She said, "What do you mean by saying that you have done nothing for me? You gave me wonderful presents by founding the Party, the armed forces and the Republic. You have made my long-harboured wishes come true. I have nothing more to wish for."

Undertaking the tasks of founding the Party, the state and the army was the sincere desire she had cherished deep in her heart from the days of the anti-Japanese struggle.

TAKING THE LEAD IN THE GENERAL IDEOLOGICAL MOBILIZATION MOVEMENT FOR NATION BUILDING[35]

The tasks of the anti-imperialist, anti-feudal democratic revolution were carried out in the north of Korea. As a result, the Korean revolution entered a new and higher stage. People's political ideology, however, lagged behind the change in the socio-economic conditions. A lot of survivals of capitalist and feudalist ideologies and customs still persisted in people's minds. Without eradicating these survivals of outmoded ideologies from their minds, and without giving full play to their national stamina and their revolutionary spirit, it would have been impossible to consolidate the success in the democratic reforms, still less advance the revolution and construction to a higher stage.

With deep insight into the pressing requirements for the development of the revolution, Kim Il Sung proposed the policy of launching a general ideological mobilization movement for

nation building at the third enlarged meeting of the PPCNK on November 25, 1946.

In order to kindle the torch of this movement in all parts of the country, Kim Jong Suk went among the masses and motivated them to carry out his policy, explaining its purpose and significance.

Korea adopted its first national economic plan in 1947, and started to carry it out. The plan envisaged reconstructing all the factories and enterprises that were not yet operational and increasing industrial production twice as much as in the previous year. The plan was enormous, and its implementation involved many difficulties. When the plan was published, the enemies of the working class criticized it, saying, "Those who used to shoot guns in the mountains are dreaming of picking a star from the sky." Some foreigners also expressed doubts about its feasibility.

One day in February 1947, anti-Japanese revolutionary veterans came to Kim Jong Suk at her residence. They told her what the enemies were saying about the economic plan.

"Wicked people like to abuse us in all kinds of ways," Kim Jong Suk said. "When the General started the armed struggle against the Japanese, the Japanese imperialists blared out that we were a 'drop in the ocean,' and that we were 'pipe dreamers' who attempted to destroy 'great Japan' by means of self-made grenades. When we liberated our country, they also ridiculed us, saying that we, who used to build log cabins in the mountains, were trying to reconstruct blast furnaces with axes and saws. In fact, we came back to the homeland at that time with nothing but our packs. But we have reconstructed ironworks and steelworks, produced iron and steel, and developed the economy to lay the foundation for the people's livelihood, haven't we?

"Our first national economic plan has been drawn up on the basis of the full calculation of our people's revolutionary

enthusiasm and the real possibilities," she continued. "You seem to be worried about the funds, materials and technology, but these problems will be resolved if we, as the General said, mix with the workers, peasants, intellectuals and technicians, and stimulate them to display their efforts and talents. To do this, we must continue to push ahead with the general ideological mobilization movement for nation building proposed by the General."

Kim Jong Suk paid frequent visits to factories, enterprises and farming villages, helping their officials, workers and peasants to improve their work attitudes and tap latent resources, and leading them to intensify the general ideological mobilization movement for nation building.

One day, she went to a motor vehicle repair shop in the central district of Pyongyang. She exchanged greetings with the workers, and asked them whether their work was going as it should.

The official in charge of the repair shop hurried to her. He was going to usher her into his office, but she declined, and suggested inspecting the workplace. Seeing that screws and other useful machine parts were lying about the workplace, she reminded the official that the workers were not repairing motor vehicles properly, on the pretext that materials and spare parts were not available. Judging from the valuable materials littering the place, she said, the General's policy of increasing production through the economical use of materials did not seem to be implemented properly. Accompanied by the official and workers, she proceeded to a heap of scrap iron in a corner of the yard. She poked about in the heap, and it revealed not only screws but also usable machine parts and pieces of equipment which could be used after a little repair. The official and workers lowered their heads with shame.

"In the past, you were colonial workers employed by the Japanese," she said, " so the factory and machines were not yours. These things which belonged to the capitalists who bled you white were not precious to you. But now you are masters of the country,

and the factory and machines belong to the country and to yourselves.

"If you, the masters of the country, are ignorant of the value of state property, discard it or waste it in this manner, what will become of the nation's economic life?" She reproached them as follows: "We have been plundered by the Japanese imperialists for a long time, and have now started building the country from scratch. There is more lack of things than what we have. So, in order to build a prosperous new Korea as soon as possible in these circumstances, we must make things we don't have and make economical use of the things we have, and must overcome the difficulties with our teeth clenched. The General has proposed the general ideological mobilization movement for nation building for the main purpose of seeing that all of us acquire the consciousness of being masters of the country and take pride in that. With a clear understanding of the General's noble idea, we must take an active part in this movement."

Kim Jong Suk explained to the officials there how they should intensify the movement. She reminded them of Kim Il Sung's instructions that the movement was not intended to end up merely shouting slogans or giving public lectures, but to encourage all the people to discard outmoded ideas and make practical contributions to building democratic Korea by their actual work. In order to intensify the movement as intended by the General, she emphasized, senior officials must take the lead in the movement. She also told the officials to make a deep study of the General's speeches, organize work meticulously and rouse the masses to the movement.

As a result, the general ideological mobilization movement for nation building and campaign for mass emulation to increase production started vigorously at the previously lethargic repair shop. The workers took good care of their materials and machine

parts, produced spare parts by themselves and overfulfilled their monthly repair plans.

On April 16, 1947, Kim Jong Suk inspected the Pyongyang Cornstarch Factory, and roused the officials and workers to the general ideological mobilization movement for nation building and the campaign for emulation to increase production.

In those days, the Cornstarch Factory produced dozens of tons of starch syrup, starch and glucose every day. The work attitude of the management and grass roots of the factory, however, retained much of the outmoded ideological leftovers from Japanese imperialism. The officials were satisfied with the output at the time, instead of trying to increase the production of sweets and biscuits for the people by repairing the equipment damaged by the fleeing Japanese. In the starch shop, starch was handled carelessly, so that much of it was spilt on the floor.

After inspecting the production processes and seeing the state of affairs in the factory, Kim Jong Suk told the workers, technicians and officials gathered to discuss the production of sweets and biscuits.

She said that General Kim Il Sung was worrying about the children who were not yet supplied with sweets and biscuits when already two years had passed since the liberation of the country. On his way back from field guidance a few days before, the General had met children in the rural area and had been dismayed to hear that the children had not tasted sweets for years. On the previous morning, he had declined to be treated to his frugal birthday table, saying that he had no face to celebrate his birthday because he had not ensured that the children were supplied with sweets.

Hearing that Kim Il Sung was expecting a great deal from the Cornstarch Factory in these circumstances, the management of the factory felt remorse at having failed to meet his expectation, because they had lacked the sense of responsibility as masters of

the country, masters of the factory, in not getting rid of the mindset of employees.

A heavy silence reigned in the hall for a while. An elderly worker stood up and said that if they got down to the task with determination, they would be able to make a machine to produce sweets, and that they should make the machine, though belatedly, and produce sweets and biscuits for the children. Other participants in the meeting also suggested improving production processes technologically and supplementing equipment to increase the production of sweets and biscuits.

After that, the factory effected a great change in the production of sweets and biscuits.

That year, Kim Jong Suk inspected the Pyongyang Silk Mill, the Kangson Steel Works, a garment factory and many other factories and enterprises to rouse their workers to nation building.

She also paid attention to rooting out the survivals of outmoded ideas and customs from the minds of the farmers.

One day in February 1947, she paid a visit to a farming village in Junghwa County, a hamlet of half a dozen farm houses. She entered a house, and found that all the villagers had gathered there for merrymaking. Thanks to Kim Il Sung, they had reaped a rich harvest on their own farms for the first time in their lives. Intoxicated with happiness, however, they were going to celebrate all through the winter, following the outmoded custom. They said that was the pleasure of life for rural people.

Kim Jong Suk said that if they spent time wasting food and without making preparations for farming, when Kim Il Sung was worrying about the difficult food situation in the country, they would be unable to prove themselves worthy of his benevolence and expectation. She told them to prepare compost from the next day to grow richer crops that year and give pleasure to Kim Il Sung, and that to do so meant taking

an active part in the general ideological mobilization movement for nation building that he had proposed.

Receiving her report about the state of affairs in farming villages that evening, Kim Il Sung took measures to step up the general ideological mobilization movement for nation building among the peasantry.

In September 1947, Kim Jong Suk visited the village of Jipsam in Ondaejin-ri, Kyongsong County, to investigate the lives of impoverished fishermen. She looked into the work of the seafood production team, which was composed of eleven fishermen's households. She said that it was a good thing that they had built a fishing boat with the money obtained by joint contribution and started fishing, and that the seafood production team was a new bud that showed the validity of General Kim Il Sung's policy of organizing fishermen's cooperatives. She was very pleased to see that their living standard was improving.

Several days later, she again went to Jipsam village, learned about the situation in the village in greater detail, and made a detailed report to Kim Il Sung. Receiving her report, Kim Il Sung said that her report proved the fishermen's mature requirement for the organization of fishermen's cooperatives, and that they had better inspect another fishing village where the fishermen were not well off.

On September 25 she visited Yombunjin in company with him. Kim Il Sung talked with the fishermen of Yombunjin for a long time, and opened up the way for cooperativization.

While staying at Kyongsong, Kim Jong Suk met small and medium entrepreneurs, and explained to them Kim Il Sung's policy of private business, and led them to turn out for nation building.

The house at the hot spring in which Kim Jong Suk stayed during her visit to Kyongsong County had been arranged for her by the county officials. In the room there was a bedclothes chest

intact, and the kitchen utensils revealed diligent care taken by the mistress of the house.

Kim Jong Suk asked the officials whether it wasn't a private house. The house belonged to a man who had been a liquor distiller before liberation, and was now dead. His wife now lived in the house with her niece. The officials had arranged to use the house for some time, and had sent the mistress and her niece to stay with kin.

Kim Jong Suk remarked, "Haven't you turned them out with malice because the owner of the house had been a little well off by brewing liquor? Judging from the fact that the mistress offered the house for our use in ready obedience, even without locking up the bedclothes chest and leaving the rice jars open, she no doubt trusts us and supports us."

"How much must the mistress have liked to live with us, although she offered the house without any objection?" Kim Jong Suk said and got her brought back immediately. They then stayed together.

As days went by, the woman felt Kim Jong Suk's modesty and kind heart, and one day asked her: "What is in store for people like us, who were rather well-to-do in the past?" That had been her secret apprehension ever since the liberation of the country.

"You needn't worry about that at all," Kim Jong Suk said, feeling the old woman's apprehension. "People who support and follow our Party's policy will live honourably wherever they are."

The woman's face brightened, but in a corner of her mind she still doubted whether people like her would be truly trusted to the end.

While treading a mill and winnowing with her, Kim Jong Suk told her about honest entrepreneurs who had backed the guerrillas in support of Kim Il Sung's ideas during the anti-Japanese armed struggle. When inspecting markets and shops to learn about the local conditions, Kim Jong Suk went about with her, meeting and

encouraging private businessmen who were producing and selling consumer goods for the people.

In the course of this, the woman clearly understood Kim Il Sung's idea of nation building, and explained it to her relatives and neighbours. Her words spread to the cameramen and tailors in the neighbourhood, and to small and medium entrepreneurs in Kyongsong. A few days later, a liquor distiller came to see Kim Jong Suk. He had been a partner of the owner of the house before liberation. Although he had heard a lot from the mistress, he came with care and tension.

He had contributed a sizeable sum of money and efforts to nation building after liberation, but he had often heard that he was a target of liquidation.

Kim Jong Suk came out to the yard, met him cordially, ushered him into the room, offered him a chair and listened to what he had to say. Having heard him out about his past and troubles, Kim Jong Suk said that General Kim Il Sung was encouraging private enterprises, and requiring the entrepreneurs to display high creativity for nation building.

"Here I've found that much criticism is directed against the small and medium entrepreneurs," Kim Jong Suk said, "calling them the bourgeoisie and targets of liquidation. These are lies spread by the factionalists and local separatists who do not support the General's policy. Since the years of the anti-Japanese armed struggle, the General has trusted not only small and medium entrepreneurs and tradesmen, but also national capitalists who love the country and nation. This trust remains unchanged now that the country is free.

"You say that you were ill-treated before liberation because you had no country of your own, and that now when the country has been liberated, you are living conscience-stricken because you were fairly well off in the past.

You must now shake off these feelings, and take an active part in nation building for the sake of the country and yourself."

The distiller told his colleagues about his interview with her, and persuaded all the businessmen in the Kyongsong area to turn out for nation building.

Several days later, Kim Jong Suk, accompanied by Women's Union officials, inspected the market, and on that occasion paid a visit to the distiller. She learned about how he was carrying on his business, and said that by operating business with the attitude of working for the people he would be held in high confidence by General Kim Il Sung and in respect by the people.

Having an informal lunch with him, she told him about some events of the anti-Japanese armed struggle. The Women's Union officials and the host and his wife listened in tears to the story of the tragic event in the Chechangzi guerrilla zone. The host said in a trembling voice that he was ashamed to face her, because he had lived comfortably in a heated room when the patriots were fighting under the General's command to win back the country, enduring untold hardships.

From what he said, she judged that he still had doubts about the lasting trust in people like him. Holding his hand in hers, she said that the General put great trust in the small and medium entrepreneurs who were cooperating in nation building, as well as showing great consideration to them, and that he should believe in the General and follow him without wavering, no matter who might say what.

Kim Jong Suk thus spent a long time inculcating the General's policy of nation building in them and inspiring them with confidence in the future. She posed with the family in their yard for a souvenir photograph before she left there.

The entrepreneur, together with many of his colleagues, participated enthusiastically in the general ideological mobilization movement for nation building, and later was elected to the local people's assembly.

Kim Jong Suk led women to launch a literacy campaign. On a visit to a farming village in Ryonggang County, she told the local women that the literacy campaign was not aimed merely at wiping out illiteracy, but at building a new prosperous democratic Korea by giving more efficient support to General Kim Il Sung's idea of nation building, because illiterate people would be unable to build the country or educate their children properly. She emphasized that women should be good at farming, and learn how to read and write so that they could repay the benevolence of the General who had brought a new life to them.

TO SOLVE THE WOMEN'S QUESTION

In early 1946, two delegates of the Women's Union Organization of North Hamgyong Province came to visit the Central Committee of the Democratic Women's Union of North Korea with a letter addressed to Kim Jong Suk.

"We, the women of North Hamgyong Province, express our deepest respect and adoration for you, Madam Kim Jong Suk, the pride of Korea in the East and the pride of all us women," the letter began, and continued to praise her who had in her teens volunteered for General Kim Il Sung's guerrillas, fought bloody battles for national liberation and women's emancipation and was now working hard for the rapid development of the Korean women's movement in the liberated country. The letter also referred to the fact that many new Women's Union organizations had been formed embracing tens of thousands of women, thanks to her correct guidance during her stay in North Hamgyong Province the previous December.

"With a desire to advance along the road of justice," the letter continued, "we the women of liberated Korea declare that neither the development of the Democratic Women's Union nor women's complete emancipation will be conceivable without your guidance that leads us to follow the great leader of our nation General Kim Il Sung's idea.

"Respected Madam,

"It is the unanimous will of the Women's Union members in North Hamgyong Province for you to take the lead in the work of the Women's Union, and guide us women along the correct road of struggle."

Similar letters of petition came to Kim Jong Suk from other provinces almost every day. She replied that she was determined to work as hard as she could in order to live up to their expectations, and that she would back them up in the Women's Union work as she was doing then, in line with the General's policy. She encouraged them to join efforts with her to ensure success in the Women's Union work.

The situation in the Korean women's movement immediately after the liberation of the country was very complex because of the divisive manoeuvres of factionalists and reactionaries.

These complex problems were resolved by Kim Jong Suk, who made every effort to implement Kim Il Sung's idea and policy concerning the women's movement, and to find solutions to women's problems.

At a meeting of the cadres of the Central Committee of the Women's Union, which was held to implement the decision of the Third Enlarged Meeting of the Executive Committee of the Central Organizing Committee of the Communist Party of North Korea, the gist of Kim Il Sung's speech at the Third Enlarged Executive Committee Meeting was conveyed, and the tasks of the Women's Union to implement the Party's political line were discussed.

Towards the close of the meeting, someone abruptly asked why only the political line of the Communist Party was discussed, and not the political line of the Democratic Party. At this, a vice-chairwoman (Pak Hyon Suk), who was sitting on the platform, remarked, as if she had been waiting for the question, that the Women's Union should take an unbiased approach to the political lines of different political parties, giving a lengthy explanation of the political line of the Democratic Party, the political line that proposed the establishment of a bourgeois republic to be headed by Syngman Rhee through a "grand alliance", including pro-Japanese elements and traitors to the nation.

An Sin Ho, one of the executives of the meeting and vice-chairwoman of the Women's Union Central Committee, pounded the desk in anger, and said that the Democratic Women's Union should support only Kim Il Sung's political line. The meeting adjourned without adopting any resolution.

An Sin Ho went right away to see Kim Jong Suk. Hearing her out, Kim Jong Suk said that the Pak Hyon Suk clique had revealed their true colours at the meeting that day, and that their manoeuvres should be smashed before it was too late. An Sin Ho knew that Pak Hyon Suk had formed a Christian women's organization in conspiracy with American missionaries, and together with Jo Man Sik had joined the Yonjonghoe, a body of the stooges of the Japanese, before the liberation of the country and preached compromise and nonresistance.

An Sin Ho heard from Kim Jong Suk more about the crimes committed by Pak Hyon Suk after liberation. Immediately after liberation, Pak Hyon Suk, hand in glove with Jo Man Sik, wormed her way into important positions in the Democratic Party and the People's Political Committee of South Phyongan Province, and obstructed the implementation of our Party's policy of building a new country. Pak also had a link with the Women's Nationalist Party, a right-wing reactionary political party organized in Seoul.

Kim Jong Suk said that only under the leadership of the working-class party could the Women's Union carry out the task of women's emancipation, and that it was essential to lay bare the true colours of the reactionaries and defeat the reactionary attempt to establish an anti-people government.

At the meeting held on the following day, the plot of the Pak Hyon Suk clique was exposed and condemned, and the reactionaries walked out of the meeting. Pak's manoeuvres, however, continued.

Kim Jong Suk made sure that measures were taken to expose Pak Hyon Suk's reactionary crimes. And they were thoroughly exposed at a Women's Union meeting of activists and at meetings of local Women's Union organizations. As a result, her clique was expelled from the Women's Union.

Kim Jong Suk recollected later that the division of the women's movement had been prevented to ensure the organizational and ideological unity of their ranks, because the Pak Hyon Suk clique had been removed before it was too late immediately after the liberation of the country.

There were many factions with different principles and ideas in the women's movement immediately after liberation. The remnants of the bourgeois women's movement especially posed problems.

At a consultative meeting organized by the Central Committee of the Women's Union in the spring of 1946, Kim Jong Suk referred to the slogans, "Let us defend women's human rights!" and "Genuine women's emancipation must begin with the winning of suffrage!" which had been put up in the streets, and asked why those slogans were still on display.

A senior official answered that the officials of the Central Committee of the Women's Union had had arguments about the slogans on several occasions, but had come to no conclusion, and

that they were expecting to receive instructions from Kim Jong Suk after the consultative meeting.

Kim Jong Suk said that if they were to reach a correct conclusion their argument should be guided by Kim Il Sung's idea of the women's movement and by his policy of building the Women's Union.

"Showing the way to be followed by the Korean women's movement immediately after liberation," Kim Jong Suk said, "the General has already raised the slogan, 'Let all women turn out for the construction of a new democratic Korea in solid unity under the banner of democracy!' We must put up this slogan."

Championing human rights for women, Kim Jong Suk said, was the slogan of the bourgeois women's movement which advocated women's rights in the exploitative society where human rights were trampled upon, a slogan which was far removed from the slogan of women's emancipation advocated by the working class. The slogan about suffrage, she continued, advocated women's right to participate in parliamentary politics in capitalist society, a slogan that had nothing to do with the political rights of working women. She further explained that the slogans about human rights and suffrage did not accord with the requirements of the revolution, when our people's government was carrying out various policies in defence of women's rights, when women were elected to the people's committees at different levels to participate in political activities with equal rights with men, and were working as the masters of factories and farm lands. She pointed out that the harmfulness of those slogans was illustrated by the "campaign against concubines", which was mentioned in the summary reports of political work for successful agrarian reform submitted by the provincial Women's Union organizations, to their Central Committee.

During the agrarian reform, factionalists in some provinces organized the "campaign against concubines" instead of

organizing women for agrarian reform, on the excuse that women should win human rights before working for nation building. They called concubines to Women's Union meetings and berated them, refused to admit women from such families and their relatives into the Women's Union or expelled such women from the Women's Union. Because the Women's Union, an organization for political education, behaved like a judicial or administrative organ, causing disturbances in many places, the Women's Union officials were shunned. Women hesitated to join the Women's Union, concubines left their protectors and roamed the streets because they had difficulties in earning a living, and men who had concubines even committed violence against Women's Union officials.

Kim Jong Suk told the Women's Union officials to learn lessons from such events, and analyze, judge and solve all the problems arising in the work of the Women's Union in line with Kim Il Sung's ideas and will.

Kim Jong Suk saw to it that kisaeng (professional female entertainers), who had been regarded as playthings of men and lived in misery, subject to ill-treatment and contempt, during Japanese imperialist rule, were guided to the road of a new life.

Kim Jong Suk helped the drafting of the programme of the Democratic Women's Union of North Korea. One day, Ho Jong Suk, who was in charge of this work, came to see Kim Jong Suk. She said that the drafting of the programme was not progressing, because the persons involved in this work persisted in opposite opinions and especially because she herself had no clear idea of how to draft the programme. She said that one of the arguments was for including in the programme the item of championing women's human rights and freeing women from political and legal fetters, and that the other was for including the item of achieving women's emancipation by the united and organized force of the proletarian women and of fighting for their immediate interests.

Hearing this, Kim Jong Suk said that one was a copy of the programme of the bourgeois women's movement, and the other was a mechanical transcription of the programme for the proletarian women's emancipation advocated by the socialist women's movement campaigners. In order to draft a correct programme for the Women's Union, she said, it was important to have a clear understanding of General Kim Il Sung's original idea for the solution of the women's question in the period of democratic revolution, and draft it in line with his instructions that the basic task of the liberated Korean women was to achieve their genuine social emancipation by eliminating the remnants of Japanese imperialism and feudalism and to win the complete independence of the country by mobilizing all their efforts in nation building.

Kim Jong Suk continued:

"We are of the opinion that the Women's Union should make it its first and foremost task for all the women to struggle to establish the Democratic People's Republic of Korea, which is the basic political task of the Party.

"The question of completely freeing women from colonial and feudal exploitation, the question of elevating their political and economic positions by making them masters of state power, land and factories, the question of freeing them from personal bondage and from inequality in their relation to men, and the question of freeing them from centuries-long ignorance and the feudal custom of despising women may also be included in the programme."

The programme of the Democratic Women's Union was drafted in this way. Kim Il Sung went over the draft programme, and said that it had been drafted very well.

The programme was unanimously adopted at the First Conference of the Women's Union, held from May 10, 1946.

Kim Jong Suk also gave a clear answer to the question of the traditions of the Korean women's movement, a question which was complex at the time.

The Democratic Women's Union was formed through the merger of different women's organizations. The women who followed the line of the Democratic Party or from Christian women's organization promoted their own "traditions." The women from the women's organization which had been under the influence of the Communist Party that had been formed in 1925 and disbanded in 1928 preferred talking about the "struggle" or "movement" led by the factionalists, as if the Korean women's movement had originated from it. One article even described the Korean Women's Friendship Society organized in 1924 as the origin of the Korean women's movement, giving a lengthy explanation of its "achievements". Even the Patriotic Women's Association, which had been controlled by the Japanese imperialists, was praised.

The Central Committee of the Women's Union decided to write an article in the journal Korean Women in the name of the head of its information department in order to criticize these incorrect opinions. Although incisive criticism was directed against reactionary women's organizations like the Patriotic Women's Association, all the women's "struggles" that had been waged at home and abroad were held up as "traditions" that should be carried forward by the Korean women's movement. This was another deviation committed by the officials of the Central Committee of the Women's Union because they themselves had no correct understanding of this question.

In these circumstances, Kim Jong Suk met the officials of the Central Committee of the Women's Union one day in February 1947.

Turning over page after page of the February issue of the magazine, Kim Jong Suk pointed out the invalidity of the various

arguments about the question of the traditions of the Korean women's movement. She said:

"The genuine traditions of the women's movement in our country were able to be established because General Kim Il Sung embarked on the road of revolution, and led the Korean revolution and the women's movement to victory."

She said that because there were deep and strong roots in the Korean women's movement which had been developed by General Kim Il Sung, it was possible to form the Democratic Women's Union, the mass political organization of the Korean women, without delay in the difficult and complex situation immediately after liberation.

Kim Jong Suk said that an active information drive was needed to give the women a correct understanding of the revolutionary traditions to be inherited by the Korean women's movement. She also taught the form and method of delivery of the information.

The Women's Union launched an intensive information and education campaign concerning the revolutionary traditions that should be inherited by the Korean women's movement, and combated without compromise the practice of distorting or denigrating these revolutionary traditions. As a result, the Korean Women's Union was able to preserve, inherit and develop the revolutionary traditions created during the anti-Japanese revolutionary struggle.

In order to free women from feudal fetters, provide them with rights and lead them to the creation of a new life, it was necessary to unite them into their own political organization as soon as possible.

Kim Jong Suk went to the Pyongyang Cornstarch Factory, the East Pyongyang area and many other places, and helped the formation of Women's Union organizations, encouraging a wide section of women to participate in building a new country.

In those days, the socio-political life of the women workers in the cornstarch factory was directed by the factory trade union instructor in charge of women. The instructor was a tall middle-aged man, not a woman. In other factories, too, men worked as chairmen of the Women's Union organizations. This state of affairs needed prompt rectification.

Kim Jong Suk pointed out that the absence of Women's Union organizations in factories like the cornstarch one, where women were in the majority, was a great mistake. She said:

"Women's Union organizations have not yet struck root among the women in factories and farming villages. This is contrary to the General's principle of building Women's Union organizations.

"Organizing the women in the residential quarters is, of course, important, but the basic task is to organize the working women into the Women's Union. Uniting a broad section of women, with the emphasis on the working women, is a requirement of the principle of building the Women's Union organizations."

Following her advice, the Pyongyang Cornstarch Factory started to form Women's Union organizations. Women's Union organizations were formed in all workshops by the end of March that year, and a meeting to organize the cornstarch factory committee of the Women's Union was held.

There were also problems in admitting women in the residential quarters into the Women's Union. Some Women's Union organizations recruited only women who had lived in poverty, and not businesswomen and their families.

One day at Sangsongyo-ri, Kim Jong Suk noticed that there were not many Women's Union members there, and asked the reason. The local Women's Union official answered that although there were many women in that area, she was unable to increase the ranks of the Women's Union quickly because there were many unacceptable women such as businesswomen and their families, religious women, kisaeng, and the like.

Kim Jong Suk asked whether any of such women wanted to join the Women's Union. The ri Women's Union official answered that some time before women from the families of small and medium entrepreneurs had come to see her, but that she had refused to admit them because their membership would impair the purity of the ranks of the Women's Union. She said that she had reported the case to the higher organization, and that it was of the same opinion.

Hearing this, Kim Jong Suk observed that women of all strata who were ready to contribute to the building of a new democratic Korea should be rallied into the Women's Union organizations, as intended by General Kim Il Sung.

By the efforts of Kim Jong Suk to implement Kim Il Sung's policy on the women's movement, the membership of the Women's Union at the time of its First Conference in May 1946 increased to approximately 600,000 from 150,000 at the time of its formation in November 1945, and reached one million at the end of 1946.

The rapid growth of the ranks of the Women's Union urgently required the qualitative consolidation of its organizations and improvement in the political and practical qualifications of its officials.

In those days, factionalists and heterogeneous elements rejected Women's Union officials from the working class and peasantry because they were ignorant. This discouraged many of the Women's Union officials of working-people origin and compelled them to resign from their positions.

In these circumstances, Kim Jong Suk met the officials of the Central Committee of the Women's Union who attended its First Conference in early May 1946. Referring to General Kim Il Sung's instruction that a special training course for Women's Union officials should be organized as soon as the First Conference of the Women's Union was over, Kim Jong Suk said:

"It isn't easy for Women's Union officials throughout the country to sit together. The training course to be organized at the opportunity of their gathering will be beneficial in raising the level of their qualifications, in the development of Women's Union work, and in many other respects."

The 15-day special training course achieved great success in elevating the level of the officials' qualifications.

On July 30, 1946, when the Law on Sex Equality was promulgated, Kim Jong Suk shared delight with the officials of the Central Committee of the Women's Union.

Kim Jong Suk said that it would be better to have celebration meetings not only in the capital and provinces, but also in the counties, sub-counties, ri, institutions, enterprises, schools, farming and fishing villages, and in all units where there were women. She also explained the form and method of celebration. As a result, the whole country bubbled over with an atmosphere of celebration, and the women's awareness of their rights and dignity became enhanced.

One day in early August 1946, several days after the celebrations, Kim Jong Suk received a report about an incident that had taken place in Hwanghae Province. A man had expelled his sick daughter-in-law from the house, and this had led to a quarrel between the in-laws and between groups of people of related family names. The ousted daughter-in-law had been suffering from recurrent illness after childbirth, leaving her bedridden for two years. Her husband's family had expelled her on a charge of committing one of the "seven evils"[36]. The "seven evils" and the "three principles of obedience" [37] preached by Confucian feudalist doctrine were outmoded ethics that required unconditional obedience and subservience from women. The expelled daughter-in-law was the victim of these outmoded morals. Her husband's people had carted her off to the yard of her

parents' house. The quarrel, which had started in this manner, became a big social problem.

Kim Jong Suk did not see it as a private affair, but as a product of outmoded feudal ethics, as an evil custom that obstructed women's social emancipation.

Such practices were in evidence in other provinces as well, though in varying degrees. A wife was kicked out of her home by her husband who was mad about gambling, because she had criticised him. Another woman was thrown out on a charge of impropriety towards her parents-in-law when she served hot water to them with only one hand because the other hand was aching.

Kim Jong Suk said that such evil customs could not be eliminated by legal control alone or by a few explanations because they had been solidly established for centuries. She instructed that the Women's Union should combat the outmoded ethics such as the "three principles of obedience" and the "seven evils" until they were wiped out. So a whirlwind of struggle against them spread throughout the country.

Kim Jong Suk also took strong measures to combat superstition among women. On a visit to the Central Committee of the Women's Union on a December day in 1947, she asked the officials whether they knew of a recent incident of superstition in Ryonggang County, South Phyongan Province.

Seeing that none of them could answer, she gave an account of the incident in which a woman in Ryonggang County had invited a shaman to perform an exorcism for three days when her mother was ill, instead of consulting a doctor, until her mother died.

Kim Jong Suk said that superstitious practices persisting among women posed a serious obstacle to building a new society and to the overall women's movement. She suggested that a short drama should be produced for performance on the basis of the incident in Ryonggang County. She said that the revolutionary drama, Mountain Shrine[38], which had been produced and put on

the stage during the anti-Japanese revolutionary struggle, was very effective in enlightening the masses.

The performance of the short drama in South Phyongan Province had a great effect in wiping out superstition. It was much more effective than a public lecture, explanation or control.

Kim Jong Suk instructed that if shamans and fortune-tellers were educated to expose the falsehood of superstition at meetings or round-table talks, the result would be as effective as the dramatic performance. Such meetings were organized widely in many places.

In the course of such activities organized by the Women's Union, a new change took place in the women's spiritual life, which had been dominated by superstition.

Women's liberation from feudal and superstitious fetters was an event of special importance not only for the Korean women's movement but also in the Korean people's 5,000-year history.

Kim Jong Suk, however, regarded it as the first step in women's emancipation. That was because sex equality and women's emancipation could be realized only when women occupied equal positions with men in all fields of social life and turned the wheel of the revolution together with men.

On the evening of May 21, 1946, when Kim Il Sung broke ground for the Pothong River improvement project, Kim Jong Suk went to see the senior Women's Union officials from provinces, cities and counties who were participating in the 15-day special training course after the First Conference of the Women's Union. She told them about the ground-breaking ceremony for the river improvement project, and said that it would be a good idea for women to display their ability by building the banks of the Pothong River shoulder to shoulder with men. She suggested that the Women's Union officials should raise this torch even if they were to skip a day's training course. The Women's Union officials agreed to her suggestion.

Kim Jong Suk said that women's participation in the river improvement project was not aimed merely at contributing labour, but that it would be an opportunity to correct the social view of women's position and role as well as the process of realizing sex equality not only in the political field, but also in the economic, cultural and all other fields of social life.

The plan of participating in the river improvement project was made known to women in Pyongyang during the night, and these women, too, made preparations to turn out for the project. The next day, May 22, the Women's Union Central Committee officials and the 200 special course trainees started for the work site. They were joined by women from the city and the number increased to more than 1,000. As they entered the work site in fine array, flying the Women's Union flag, a large number of young and middle-aged people watched them wide-eyed. Women's support for the project increased with each passing day. A large number of housewives, however, were thinking that their place was at home.

Kim Jong Suk proposed a rally of housewives in Pyongyang in order to rouse them to social activity. On June 16, the second-phase campaign was to start to hit the major targets of the project. On that morning, more than 10,000 housewives gathered in the playground of the Kwangsong Middle School. The Women's Union flags and placards carried by the Women's Union organizations in the city fluttered in the wind, and amid the strains of band music the women sang songs and shouted slogans. That was the first grand rally of housewives in the history of Pyongyang. At the meeting, a report was made, followed by speeches, and a letter of thanks to Kim Il Sung was adopted. After the rally, the participants marched to the site of the river improvement project in soaring spirits. At the work site, the Korean women who had joined the nation-building movement,

united behind Kim Il Sung, demonstrated their strength for the first time.

The project, which had been claimed to take more than three years to finish, was completed in 55 days, on July 15, 1946. Women played a big role in achieving this success.

During the river improvement project, Kim Jong Suk quietly went to the work site in work clothes and worked with the Women's Union members, in order to encourage her fellow women. In July it rained heavily, but she went to the work site almost every day. In the course of this, the news that she and her son were working on the river bank spread all around the work site.

One day, an old man who had been watching the work site from the embankment approached Kim Jong Suk, and bowed deeply to her.

"We the Korean people are jubilant to have heaven-sent General Kim Il Sung as our sun," the old man said in great excitement. "And now, Madam Kim Jong Suk, you are taking the trouble to allay the mental pain of all the people. How can we repay your great benevolence?"

The old man's family had lived by the Pothong River for generations, falling victims to floods every year. He had been giving a helping hand to the project ever since it had started. He was deeply moved by the sight of the women working hard hand in hand with the men. Knowing that a great change had taken place in the women's work attitude thanks to Kim Jong Suk, he bowed to her to express his surprise and gratitude to her who had raised the women, who had been regarded as weaklings, to the level of masters of the country, stalwart working women.

Drawing on her experience at the river improvement project, Kim Jong Suk visited Kyongsong County, North Hamgyong Provincel; Kosong County, Kangwon Province; Taedong County and Yangdok County, South Phyongan Province; and many other

parts of the country to lead the Women's Union organizations to rouse all the women to the struggle to build a new country.

During the first democratic elections in Korea, Kim Jong Suk also made every effort to make a fresh advance in women's social emancipation through the elections. She said that the elections would be a significant event in the practical exercise of women's equal political rights that had been guaranteed by the Law on Sex Equality.

As the election day approached, reactionary elements intensified their manoeuvres to thwart the elections. In some parts of the country, they instigated shamans and fortune-tellers to spread a rumour that boycotting the elections would banish evil spirits for three years, that if a voter brought home his or her ballot and burnt it, he or she would not fall ill, and that the voting procedure had changed so that the black box was for voting yes, and the white box was for voting no. Wicked ministers and priests preached that the third of November (election day-Tr.) was the Sabbath so that their congregations should rest at home after attending church service on that day, instead of going to the polls.

At a meeting with the officials of the Central Committee of the Women's Union towards the end of October, Kim Jong Suk said that competent officials and Women's Union members should be assigned to the election campaign to counter the manoeuvres of the reactionaries and that canvasses be organized to explain the election day and the election procedure to each voter and to give him or her demonstration lessons.

As a result, the schemes of the reactionaries were frustrated, and all the women voters participated in the first democratic elections with a high degree of political awareness and enthusiasm.

On the election day, Kim Jong Suk, in the company of Women's Union officials, voted in sub-election district No. 52, Jungsong election district, Central District, Pyongyang. When she

came out of the booth after casting her ballot, the crowd surrounded her in excitement. Kim Jong Suk said:

"We women, who account for half the population, took part in the first democratic elections today as legitimate voters. Moreover, many women were nominated as candidates in the elections to the people's committees of different levels and have been elected. This is the first event of women's jubilation in our people's history of five thousand years. This also powerfully demonstrates that we women, free from all personal and social fetters and discrimination, have become masters of our socio-political life."

Around this time, the Korean women's movement welcomed another jubilant event. The Women's Union was admitted to the Women's International Democratic Federation, so that Korean women emerged on the international scene shoulder to shoulder with their foreign counterparts.

Kim Jong Suk had proposed the idea of the Korean Women's Union joining the women's international organization in April 1946. At that time, she went over the draft report to be read at the First Conference of the Women's Union. She asked the official concerned why nothing was mentioned in the report about how the union would participate in activities on the international scene. Hearing that it was still too early for the union to start international activities, she said that it would be advisable for the conference to discuss the question of joining the Women's International Democratic Federation. Although the Korean Women's Union was young, she added, it should accumulate experience and work boldly, so that it would show the progressive women of the rest of the world the might of Korean women, who were building a new country, united closely behind General Kim Il Sung, and should win their support and sympathy.

This was how the First Conference of the Women's Union discussed and decided the question of the Union's application for membership of the international women's organization.

The Women's International Democratic Federation invited a delegate from the Korean Women's Union to its special conference to be opened on October 10 that year. On October 14, the delegate of the Korean Women's Union made a speech at the conference, which unanimously decided to admit of the Korean Women's Union.

LET US GIVE THE YOUNGER GENERATION A GOOD EDUCATION

Kim Il Sung made sure that the First Session of the PPCNK put the question of pencils on its agenda, and adopted a decision to ensure domestic pencil production.

What was the background which led to the inclusion of the pencil question in the agenda of the first session of the people's government organ? On a January day in 1946, Kim Jong Suk, who was on a visit to a farming village on the outskirts of Pyongyang, saw schoolchildren writing in sand and erasing it over and over again while studying in a room of a peasant's house. She asked them if they had no pencils to write with. The answer was that they had pencils but were sparing them for use in class at school.

Kim Jong Suk unwrapped the school things of a pupil and found only a pencil stub which was too short to pick up. With a heavy heart, she pondered why it was impossible to provide pencils for the schoolchildren now that the country was liberated, although she herself had learned to write in sand at the night school in Fuyandong, and although the guerrillas had learned to write in the snow or on the ground.

The same day she told Kim Il Sung what she had witnessed. Kim Il Sung remarked that the Japanese imperialists had not

constructed even one pencil factory in Korea during the many years of their colonial rule, and that he would take measures to construct a large pencil factory in the future, while encouraging small and medium entrepreneurs to produce a lot of pencils in many places in the immediate period ahead.

Kim Jong Suk, who was thinking how to ensure pencil production, heard that a certain shop had always kept pencils in stock. She paid a visit to the shop and found that it was selling pencils by getting the supplies from an entrepreneur who was producing them with simple equipment in the Pothong Plain. She bought a few pencils, and returned home.

Kim Il Sung tried out one of the pencils which Kim Jong Suk had sharpened for him. He commented that it was good enough, and would be useful for the schoolchildren. He was pleased that she had found a source. The next day, he inspected the entrepreneur's workshop, shaking the graphite-and-coal-dust-stained hands of the workers there. He praised them, saying that they were doing an excellent job, and encouraging them to produce many more good-quality pencils by promising that the state would provide all the necessary conditions for pencil production.

This was the background to the pencil question being put on the agenda of the First Session of the PPCNK in February that year.

In those days, Kim Jong Suk helped schools to teach democratic and revolutionary ideas, as the contents of the curriculum.

Towards the end of March that year, she paid a visit to the Pyongyang Girls' Middle School No. 4, and talked with the teachers and student representatives. Through these talks, she learned that schools were short of teachers, equipment and laboratory and practice facilities. The most difficult problem was the lack of textbooks with acceptable contents. The textbooks on

natural science such as algebra, geometry, physics and chemistry were those which had been used under Japanese imperialist rule. The subjects of social science were being taught on the basis of the teaching programmes which were issued by the education bureau from time to time.

Kim Jong Suk said that textbooks and equipment would be supplied before long, and that although the teaching conditions were difficult, there were important questions which must not be overlooked. She went on to say that the General had instructed that the most important question in education was to democratize education. In order to democratize education, she observed, it was necessary, first of all, to eliminate the remnants of the Japanese imperialists' colonial enslavement education as soon as possible.

Even the natural science subjects, and the application questions of mathematics for example, might have contents disparaging the Korean people, she said, and advised the teachers to confirm if there were any survivals of the Japanese imperialists' way of doing things in education, in the organization of students' extra-curricular activities or in educational administration.

She also instructed that the General's line of building a new Korea should be clearly taught to the students, and that the students should be inspired with the consciousness that the Koreans were no longer colonial slaves of imperialist Japan, but legitimate masters of an independent country.

Korean history, geography and culture, she continued, should be taught well to the students, and especially how the excellent sons and daughters of the Korean people had fought, arms in hand, against the Japanese imperialists.

The students should not only be taught to acquire living knowledge capable of contributing to democratic development, she instructed, but be encouraged to participate in social activity like the information campaign for agrarian reform, so that they would become efficient workers of democratic Korea.

Kim Jong Suk frequented schools in later days, too, learned about how education was given, and helped them to solve their problems.

One day in July 1947, she inspected a printing shop where school textbooks were printed. That morning Kim Il Sung had said in apprehension that the textbooks and notebooks for the new school year had not yet been prepared.

The printing shop was printing things in the order of contracts, regardless of the importance of publications, so that the printing of textbooks was being deferred.

Kim Jong Suk said that since the officials were working for the revolution, not to make money, in the liberated country, they should have decided the order of printing from the point of view of the interests of the revolution, and that nothing was more pressing than the printing of textbooks when the new school year was approaching.

On return from the printing shop, Kim Jong Suk made a report on the work attitude of the printing shop to Kim Il Sung, and suggested the establishment of a separate printing shop for textbooks to meet the demand in time.

Kim Il Sung ensured that the printing shop made printing the textbooks a priority, and later took measures to set up a separate textbook printing shop. The problem of textbooks, the biggest problem in school education, was thus resolved.

Kim Jong Suk paid deep attention to the revolutionary education of children through organizational life and various social activities.

One day in June 1946, Kim Jong Suk attended the pledging ceremony for the membership of the Children's Union (CU) at the Sinyang Primary School in Pyongyang. The teachers and pupils were delighted at Kim Jong Suk's attendance at the ceremony. The pupils' guardians came in holiday attire.

The principal made his report, the head of the CU read out the written oath, and then the CU badges were pinned on the new members at the ceremony.

The principal requested Kim Jong Suk to make a congratulatory speech. She had not anticipated the request. Ordinarily she would have declined, but she took the floor in consideration of the younger generation. She first warmly congratulated the new members of the CU, and continued:

"Seeing you joining the ranks of the Children's Union in the General's embrace, I am reminded of the Children's Corps in the guerrilla bases. In the difficult years when fighting the Japanese marauders in howling snowstorms, General Kim Il Sung formed the Children's Corps, a genuine organization of children, looking forward to the distant future of the revolution."

Kim Jong Suk referred to the CC, which had fought without yielding to stern trials, and continued as follows:

"The red flag which General Kim Il Sung handed over to the Children's Corps during the bloody fight to destroy the Japanese marauders has now been inherited by the Children's Union of Korea, and its ranks have grown to number hundreds of thousands."

Kim Jong Suk emphasized that the members of the CU should grow into the workers of new Korea loyal to General Kim Il Sung, just as the members of the CC had fought to the end, remaining loyal to the revolutionary principles.

When the pledging ceremony was over, Kim Jong Suk sat together with the instructors of the CU. She first went over the written oath for the membership of the CU, and then advised the instructors that pledging loyalty to the General was of primary importance, because the pledge was to be made by the children when starting their organizational life. After examining the code of the CU, she suggested that the slogan, "Let us unite under the

flag of General Kim Il Sung!" would be better than the given four slogans.

The Central Committee of the Democratic Youth League (DYL) adopted a new written oath and a new slogan, according to her suggestions. After helping the CU to correct its political and ideological principles, Kim Jong Suk proposed the movement for the creation of exemplary CU organizations. She frequently met members of the CU, told them how bravely the CC had fought during the anti-Japanese armed struggle, and led the CU members to emulate the unbreakable fighting spirit and revolutionary mettle of the CC.

Kim Jong Suk encouraged mass gymnastics among the schoolchildren so as to develop their sense of organization and collectivist spirit.

In April 1947, the DYL was preparing the function of the "night of special physical training" anticipating the opening of its gymnasium in Namsanjong, Pyongyang.

At this time the physical-training teacher of the Pyongyang Girls' Middle School No. 4 proposed the preparation of a mass gymnastics performance, but the proposal was not accepted, because opinions were expressed against the idea on the excuse of lack of experience and technical know-how. They were tending towards adopting several easy sporting events. Knowing this, Kim Jong Suk said that the teacher's proposal was very good, that mass gymnastics were good not only for physical training but also in developing the sense of organization and the collectivist spirit among the schoolchildren. She said that the CC schools in the guerrilla bases held such physical exercises frequently, though not on a large scale, during the anti-Japanese armed struggle, and that the children who participated in the exercises and the audience had received a good education through the event. She encouraged the teachers and schoolchildren to make joint

efforts to create a good mass gymnastics performance of educational value.

The physical-training teacher said with great pleasure that he could now clearly form in his mind the educational content of the mass gymnastics.

One day towards the end of April, Kim Jong Suk, in company with Kim Il Sung, attended the function of the "night of special physical training".

After a variety of sporting events, the performance of the mass gymnastics was held at last. Schoolchildren in white gym suits first performed rhythmic gymnastic exercises without apparatus, describing their vigorous growth and learning in democratic educational institutions. This was followed bychildren with red flowers in both hands forming a variety of shapes, expressing glory and thanks to Kim Il Sung by gymnastic movements. Eighteen children moved forward, spreading out from their breasts the words, "Let us prepare ourselves to become stalwart workers of a new democratic Korea!" At that moment, the formation of gymnastic exercises without apparatus, which had left the scene, appeared again, with the pupils running in the fan-shape of the flower gymnastic formation, shouting, "Long live General Kim Il Sung!"

Kim Il Sung applauded with satisfaction at each change of scene. Kim Jong Suk was delighted. She saw the future of Korea under the leadership of Kim Il Sung in the vivacious and healthy schoolchildren, and felt the greatest happiness.

On June 5, 1949, Kim Jong Suk viewed a demonstration march of 40,000 CU members and a gathering of their combined organizations to commemorate the third anniversary of the founding of the CU. On her way back, she recollected with strong emotion the May Day celebration and demonstration of the CV and the CC which had taken place at Beidong, Wangougou, sixteen years before. Looking at the procession of the CU members through the window of her car, she said, "Nothing would

be more pleasant than to see the vivacious growth of the children who will shoulder the future of the country."

Kim Jong Suk also paid attention to children of pre-school age. In July 1947, by her efforts, nurseries and kindergartens were opened, which had been set up as models for the whole country.

Kim Jong Suk gave much thought to how she should carry out Kim Il Sung's instructions on setting up a large number of nurseries and kindergartens, instructions he had given to the Women's Union officials who were to participate in the First Conference of the Democratic Women's Union of North Korea in May 1946.

On January 10 of the following year, having received a report from the officials concerned that they had obtained a building suitable for a nursery, she went to the spot. Seeing the two-storey brick building, in Sunyong-ri, Central District, she said that, if well arranged, it could be used as a nursery. She entered it, and inspected the rooms on each floor, jotting something down in her pocketbook now and then. The building had been occupied by a conservatory until recently, and the inside was in disorder. An official said with a puzzled look that it would take a great deal of labour to arrange it to be used for a nursery.

Kim Jong Suk said that they should arrange the nursery by their own efforts, instead of waiting until everything was provided, encouraging them by saying that she would help them as much as she could.

At night, she spread a large sheet of paper on her desk, and drew a design in different colours, erasing and drawing now and then, until past midnight, referring to the pocketbook in which she had jotted something down while inspecting the rooms. Her design for the nursery indicated the locations of the babies' bedroom, feeding room, dining room, play room, medical room, changing room, bathroom, kitchen, store and office, as well as kinds of furniture and fittings.

On January 12, she went to the building again with her design, and explained to the officials the distribution of rooms and their arrangement. She made sure that the people who would work at the nursery were selected and appointed as soon as possible, that a nurse was appointed to the medical room because there were not many doctors, and that a hospital doctor was designated to look after the nursery, conducting medical examinations and treatment whenever necessary.

One day in May 1947, when the arrangement of the nursery was basically completed, she learned about what was still lacking, made quilts with cloth which had been sent from her comrades-in-arms as a present, and obtained a sewing machine, kitchen utensils and even a gramophone, and sent them to the nursery.

Kim Jong Suk timed the daily routine of the nursery so as to be convenient for the babies' mothers to go to work and come home after work. The doors of the wardrobes were pasted with various pictures like airplanes, motor cars, tanks, apples, tomatoes, and so on, so that the pre-school children could easily find their own wardrobes. When she got a request from an official to name the nursery, soon after its opening, she said that the March Eighth Nursery would be a good name because March 8 was International Women's Day.

The history of people-orientated nursery education in Korea started with the March Eighth Nursery as the model which had been set up by Kim Jong Suk. Today, the Korean people call the March Eighth Nursery Kim Jong Suk Nursery.

One September day in 1947, Kim Il Sung paid a visit to the March Eighth Nursery. He praised the officials concerned for their effort to prepare the nursery, saying that the daily routine was well timed, and that the pictures on the doors of the wardrobes were well conceived to suit the intellectual development of the children, and that that would help the emotional development of the children.

So that the toddlers might not hurt themselves if they fell, he told the officials to bring carpets from the Party Central Committee.

Kim Jong Suk put great efforts also into the work of kindergartens.

After the one-year kindergarten class in the primary schools was abolished and state measures were taken to set up three-year kindergartens in 1947, many state kindergartens were organized.

Inspecting a kindergarten in January 25, 1949, Kim Jong Suk said that children were innocent and sensitive to their surroundings, like white paper which becomes red when dyed red, and becomes green when dyed green, that they should be educated accordingly, that the education and edification of children was very important work affecting the future of the country and nation, and that the destiny of the country would be decided by how the children were educated and edified.

On a second visit to the kindergarten in March that year, she observed how the children were taught. She instructed that since the kindergartners, especially the children of the advanced class, would be going to school before long, they should be taught subject by subject during lessons as was done at school, and that emotional education to inspire the children with hatred for the class enemy should not be overlooked in teaching songs and plays.

Kim Jong Suk made great efforts to develop the kindergarten into a model for the whole country. In late June that year, she confirmed the experience of the kindergarten, and emphasized the need to disseminate it widely.

The following year, a national meeting was held in Pyongyang for the kindergarten teachers to share experiences. Before that time, Kim Jong Suk had passed away. Those who attended the meeting grieved over her death, and pledged to bring up the children excellently in line with her noble idea.

Kim Jong Suk regarded the training of national cadres as the key to the building of a new society and as an important guarantee for the lasting prosperity of the country. She gave loyal support for the noble idea of Kim Il Sung, who was giving priority to this work.

The establishment of a university was an important undertaking to build a "pedigree farm" for the training of national cadres.

In July 1946, Kim Il Sung announced the decision of the PPCNK on establishing the first people's university in Korea, and made preparations for this.

The committee for the preparation of the establishment of the university decided to name the university after Kim Il Sung before it set about working.

One day, Kim Jong Suk heard from an official that those who had argued for "Seoul centre" were now critical about naming the university after Kim Il Sung. She said that there was nothing surprising in their behaviour in view of the fact that from the start they had said that the establishment of the university was "premature". She emphasized that so naming the university was absolutely natural because it reflected the unanimous desire of the people.

"It is the respected General who proposed the establishment of the university, and it is his energetic leadership that has enabled us to see its establishment very soon, isn't it?" she said. "Let us establish Kim Il Sung University as soon as possible, and take pride in its name. Let us make it a world-class university."

The preparation for the university's establishment made brisk headway.

Kim Jong Suk thought of a way to educate the sons and daughters of workers, peasants, and revolutionary martyrs to become national cadres by giving them preparatory training for the university course. She suggested this idea to Kim Il Sung.

Kim Jong Suk also backed up the work of setting up new colleges following Kim Il Sung's idea of organizing different technical colleges on the basis of some departments of the university as parent bodies. In this way she made an imperishable contribution to giving birth to many universities and colleges on this land where there had been none before, and to making a new history of mass-producing national cadres.

IMMORTAL CONTRIBUTIONS TO ARMY BUILDING

Kim Il Sung set it as an urgent task to build a strong national army capable of defending the country and nation, and safeguarding the revolutionary achievements in view of the need for Korea to become a completely independent and sovereign state, especially now that the US imperialists had occupied half of Korea and were making frantic attempts to make the whole of Korea their colony. To this end, he advanced a policy of immediately transforming the KPRA into a revolutionary regular army.

Kim Jong Suk made every possible effort to implement Kim Il Sung's line of army building, in line with the truth of the revolution she had learned in the early days of her revolutionary activities that force of arms is the only means of liberating the country and safeguarding the Party and the leader, the homeland and the revolution.

She directed her primary concern to training competent military and political cadres who would play a pivotal role in developing the KPRA into a regular revolutionary army. She visited the Pyongyang Institute on more than 30 occasions to

instruct that the institute should discharge its mission and duty as a base for the training of the military and political cadres.

On February 23, 1946, she, in the company of Kim Il Sung, attended the inaugural ceremony of the Pyongyang Institute, when she instructed the officials of the institute that its education and edification should be conducted thoroughly with Kim Il Sung's revolutionary ideology as the one and only guideline.

That day, she happened to see several portraits of foreign generals hanging on the wall along the corridor of the quarters and asked the reason why there were only portraits of foreign generals and not Korean ones. She said that Korea, too, had many renowned patriotic generals to boast of, and that they should hang pictures of Korean generals as patriotism pivots on one's full knowledge about the things of one's own country.

While inspecting various kinds of visual aids made by the institute itself, she stressed that, considering the fact that most of the students were only basically literate, demonstrations and visual aids should be encouraged. She explained that military education should not be given mechanically in a foreign way, but be conducted in the Korean way, as was done during the anti-Japanese armed struggle. Her instructions served as a basis on which the Pyongyang Institute later worked out its educational programmes, true to Kim Il Sung's ideology in accordance with its character and mission. It also improved its teaching methods, and established a revolutionary atmosphere of intense studying among the students.

Kim Jong Suk channeled her greatest effort, before anything else, into educating the students of the Pyongyang Institute and other training centres of military and political officers in unfailing loyalty to Kim Il Sung. When Song of General Kim Il Sung was composed, she got the song sung by the students of the Pyongyang Institute in chorus, after a discussion with Kim Chaek, the then principal of the institute.

From January to June 1946 the US aggressors formed the south Korean "National Defence Force", composed of eight regiments, and "Coast Guards", and seized command over them, pursuing their undisguised ambition to turn south Korea into their permanent colony. The prevailing situation underlined the need to develop the KPRA into a modern regular revolutionary army at the earliest date.

Rising to the occasion, Kim Il Sung set up, in July 1946, the Central Security Officers School, whose mission it was to specialize in training military officers, and ensured that the Pyongyang Institute devoted itself to training political and cultural officers for the army. These measures proved their worth in developing military education in a fresh way.

During her frequent visits to the Central Security Officers School, Kim Jong Suk made every effort to fully equip the students with Kim Il Sung's idea on military affairs, and with Korean-style strategy and tactics. While on inspection of the tactical training ground on several occasions, she clearly explained to the teaching staff and students about Kim Il Sung's elusive tactics for offensive and strike, and the superb Korean-style art of war, and led them to implement Kim Il Sung's policy on the formation of artillery.

Kim Jong Suk also attached great importance to educating the political cadres of the army. She visited the Pyongyang Institute in late March and early May 1947, when she said that the most important thing in the work of this school was ideological education as it was the key to preparing all the students to be Kim Il Sung's loyal political cadres. Discovering the tendency of the officials of this school to neglect military subjects on the excuse that the school was committed to training political officers, she taught that political and cultural officers with a poor grasp of military affairs would be unable to guide the servicemen in the

carrying out of their military duties or to render positive political assistance to the military officers.

On October 5, 1947, Kim Jong Suk attended the third-term graduation ceremony of the Pyongyang Institute.

She warmly congratulated the graduates on their appointment to the posts in the building of the revolutionary armed forces, and said that General Kim Il Sung was reposing great trust in them who were the hard core of the Workers' Party and the political cadres of the revolutionary army. She stressed that they should, above all else, educate all the servicemen of their respective units to be unfailingly loyal to the Korean revolution by firmly equipping them with his revolutionary idea and uniting them closely behind him.

Kim Jong Suk channeled great efforts also into the training of commanding officers of arms essential to the building of a regular army.

Training the cadres of arms, services and specialist corps was indispensable for the building of a regular army. But the prevailing conditions of the country right after liberation did not allow the immediate setting up of training centres for the cadres required for all arms, services and specialist corps.

On March 17, 1946, Kim Il Sung took the measure of organizing an air force course at the Pyongyang Institute. On June 30 the same year, Kim Jong Suk visited the institute to inform the senior officials there of Kim Il Sung's great concern for the formation of an air force for new Korea; she also emphasized the need for the institute to speed up the construction of the airport now under way by its own efforts.

She then proceeded to the construction site, and helped the students with their work, encouraging them to finish the project as soon as possible.

The teaching staff and the students made collective innovations to finish the project to provide conditions for

flight training by the end of July that year, and set about the training. On August 11 that year, they performed a demonstration flight in the presence of Kim Il Sung and Kim Jong Suk.

In November the following year Kim Jong Suk had an opportunity to meet at her house the newly-appointed principal of the Naval Security Officers School, when she said to him: "Korea urgently needs a powerful navy to safeguard its seas on three sides; the most realistic and quickest way to this end is to train the hard core of the navy by our own efforts. I hope that you will do your best to push ahead with the work of quickly training the navy officers capable of commanding sea battles and managing modern warships."

In addition, she earnestly asked the senior officials of the relevant province to mobilize the local people for active assistance for the management of his school.

Kim Jong Suk's energetic activities devoted to the training of the backbone of the regular army greatly contributed to building up the revolutionary army of Korea as an army of the Party from the outset of its transformation into the Korean People's Army (KPA) and laying a strong political and military basis on which the KPA could perform its noble mission as the defender of the revolutionary cause of Korea.

In this period, Kim Jong Suk was busy stepping up the work of providing supplies necessary for the building of a regular army.

The immediate need was for uniforms. No particular type of uniform was defined as yet; given the situation, the servicemen, regardless of rank, were wearing all sorts of clothes, even captured Japanese uniforms.

With regard to the type of uniform of the KPA, Kim Il Sung pointed out the principle that the uniform should reflect the KPA's character as an army of the revolution and the people, an army sustaining the traditions created during the anti-Japanese armed

struggle, represent the national characteristics and the people's emotional life, and be convenient for combat.

Kim Jong Suk, for her part, made every endeavour for the early production of samples of a uniform, belt, cap, epaulette, knapsack, bandolier, cartridge belt, water bottle pocket and an infantry spade case, herself visiting the military uniform factory frequently.

On February 25, 1947, the samples of the first kind of uniform were produced.

Kim Jong Suk tried the samples on the Guards Platoon members to get any shortcomings redressed before showing them to Kim Il Sung.

While checking the uniforms, Kim Il Sung suggested that the collars of the shirts be folded over and a blue patch be joined between them, that cuffs be padded onto sleeves, separate bands of cloth be attached to the ankle part of trousers, buttons be sewn on the cuffs and trouser legs, and that the rim of the cap be lowered and another band of cloth be padded round it.

Kim Jong Suk immediately took measures to get the finishing touches made to the uniforms as suggested by him.

The same day, when Kim Il Sung was inspecting women's uniforms, she aired her opinion that the present type of skirt seemed unsuitable for the physiques of Korean women and inconvenient for action, and suggested that the skirt be in the form of what the anti-Japanese women guerrillas used to wear, its surface pleated and its hem expanded.

Kim Il Sung approved her suggestion. He then said that the sample of a knapsack on display that day would be inconvenient and unsuitable for military action, and asked her to redesign it herself.

The next morning, Kim Jong Suk showed Kim Il Sung a sample knapsack she had made through the night, by following the model of those used by the anti-Japanese guerrilla army. She said that she had made it large enough for containing food,

ammunition and survival kits, got strings sewn to its surface to fasten a blanket with and attached pockets to it to keep other necessary articles in. She also added that she had made the shoulder straps by stitching two pieces of cloth of appropriate size, as she had thought that the straps, which the guerrillas used to make by cutting raw cotton cloth, were unsuitable for a regular army.

Upon close study of the knapsack while listening to her explanation, Kim Il Sung expressed his satisfaction at the sample, saying that it looked good and convenient, and also easy to make by factories, and that the stitched straps would quite match the appearance of a regular army and save much cloth.

On March 17, 1947, he approved the finished samples as the uniforms of the future KPA and set the task of producing summer uniforms for all the servicemen by April.

Kim Jong Suk visited the military uniform factory and other relevant factories almost every day to make sure that the production processes were put on an assembly line for increased output and improved quality of the products. As a result, all servicemen were able to wear new uniforms from May that year on, taking on fresh features worthy of a regular army.

One day in late October 1947, Kim Il Sung said that, on the occasion of the second anniversary of the establishment of the central power organ on February 8 the following year the founding of the KPA as a transformation of the KPRA into a modern regular army should be declared and a grand parade of the KPA held.

The KPA's parade required the production of extra uniforms for an additional 1,200 officers and 6,000 soldiers. Only three months were left till the event, yet production capacity was limited. This challenge drove some of the officials in the field of supply services even to propose ordering the uniforms in question from a foreign country.

Kim Jong Suk informed the officials and workers concerned of Kim Il Sung's instruction to abandon the thought of ordering uniforms from abroad for the paraders and said, "The sewing unit members of the guerrilla army used to sit up several nights in a row to prepare new uniforms for the guerrillas in spring and autumn. The situation at that time required us to procure cloth and cotton for ourselves and make uniforms by hand-run sewing machine or by needlework while battles continued non-stop; sometimes we had to grind a darning needle to make a needle for the sewing machine. Yet we always carried out our assignment by the target date set by General Kim Il Sung in all circumstances."

Her encouragement aroused a hearty response.

By emulating the spirit and mettle displayed by the sewing unit members of the KPRA, the workers speeded up their work and fulfilled their quota within the set period.

Kim Jong Suk also concerned herself with the work of making the KPA ensigns, checking the whole process from designing to manufacturing, occasionally herself embroidering or running a sewing machine together with some officers' wives.

The present-day KPA's ensigns are permeated with the painstaking efforts she made in those days.

Kim Jong Suk showed the utmost care when preparing the outfit for Kim Il Sung to wear during his inspection of the parade.

The outfit, including an overcoat, cap and boots which Kim Il Sung wore on the rostrum when he inspected the parade--which can be seen in documentary albums and films--was what Kim Jong Suk prepared with the utmost care.

On February 8, 1948, Korea saw in Pyongyang a grand parade proclaiming the founding of its regular army, which its people had long wished to have.

Kim Jong Suk came to the ceremony. She sometimes clapped her hands as a salute to the parading columns or looked up at Kim Il Sung on the rostrum, her eyes brimming with tears

of joy over this event of Korea's long-harboured desire having turned into reality.

She said to the fellow anti-Japanese revolutionary fighters around her: "Not a single general in the world was ever subject to such hardships and costs as our General Kim Il Sung has experienced to found an army and develop it. In this sense our people's army must remain an army of the great General for ever."

Her words moved them to tears, reminding them keenly of Kim Il Sung's devoted services for this event and Kim Jong Suk's contributions to his cause of army building.

Afterwards, Kim Jong Suk continued to devote time and effort for the KPA's rapid development.

Kim Il Sung built up the KPA continuously while establishing its system of command, and organized new branches of its arms. With a plan to organize a powerful, modernized and mechanized tank unit within the army, he entrusted Ryu Kyong Su in early August 1948 with the task of organizing the first tank unit.

Kim Jong Suk gave Ryu Kyong Su a new uniform she had prepared for him, and said, "This uniform symbolizes your fellow revolutionary comrades' earnest request that you should build a powerful tank unit as soon as possible," and asked him to quickly organize a tank unit and strengthen it into an unrivalled one with strong fighting efficiency.

Kim Jong Suk paid Ryu a visit almost every three days to help him carry out his assignment, each time handing out to the tank unit men pens, books or other types of stationery necessary for their study and training, as well as leaf tobacco her grandfather-in-law had grown in Mangyongdae, stimulating them to further display their enthusiasm in training to live up to the expectations of the people.

One day, when Kim Jong Suk accompanied Kim Il Sung on a trip to the unit where training was proceeding in real earnest, she

heard a foreign military official tell the commanding officers of the unit that it would probably take a year at the earliest for the trainees to master tank driving skills. She, however, advised the officers there: "The present circumstances in our country do not permit us to spend such a long time learning tank driving skills. I think our soldiers can learn the skills in a short time if you efficiently organize and guide their training in accordance with their ideological preparedness. I believe that our soldiers are willing to master the techniques in only a few months." Her encouraging remarks prompted them to adopt the Korean way for the training, which enabled all the soldiers of the unit to acquire tank driving techniques within three months, and stage a parade of tanks. At the sight of the tanks rumbling past, Kim Jong Suk remarked: "We had no tanks during the days of guerrilla warfare. But as we have liberated the country, we need a large number of tanks. Now that the US troops have occupied the southern part of Korea and are attempting to conquer the northern part as well, we cannot counter them with only rifles, as before. We should reinforce the People's Army with tank and other mechanized units."

One day in June 1949, Kim Jong Suk visited an air force unit, when she heard that a woman librarian of the headquarters was very determined to become a pilot. She said to the officials concerned: "Her decision is laudable. I think you should train her as a woman pilot, as instructed by the General. Korean women are so strong-minded and patriotic that they can manage to become good pilots, I think." Then, she told them that the women fighters of the KPRA had been good at parachuting, which even the men were sometimes hesitant to try.

The librarian, Thae Son Hui, thanks to Kim Jong Suk's trust in her, became the first woman pilot in Korea, and performed heroic exploits during the Fatherland Liberation War.

At the start of 1949, several uniform and military accoutrements factories were put under the authority of the Special Industry Bureau of the Cabinet. Kim Jong Suk paid special attention to increased production in these factories.

On March 6 that year, she visited a uniform factory to inspect the production processes, acquainting herself with the situation there, before giving lecture to the workers. In her lecture she outlined the prevailing situation developing to the brink of war due to frequent military provocations by the US imperialists and south Korean puppet clique along the demarcation line on the 38th Parallel, in pursuance of their undisguised attempt for a war in Korea. She also briefed the workers on the struggle of the sewing unit members of the KPRA during the anti-Japanese armed struggle, and called on them to launch a vigorous campaign for increased production of uniforms and military accoutrements, bearing in mind the importance of their duty.

Greatly inspired by her speech, the workers of this factory achieved tangible success in producing uniforms and military accoutrements in excess of the production quotas within a few months.

Kim Jong Suk showed close concern about the supply services for the servicemen, too. She visited the farms belonging to the Supply Services Bureau of the KPA frequently, encouraging the farm to set an example in vegetable farming and pig-raising, and spread it to all farms managed by KPA units. On her visit to a bakery, she encouraged the workers there to produce quality bread for the servicemen and increase the production of dry biscuits which could serve as light meals for the servicemen during their training or in case of emergency.

What drew her special attention in her effort to support Kim Il Sung's idea of army building was the matter of inaugurating the newspaper Korean People's Army, and raising its politico-ideological level.

In early May 1948, she studied the trial edition of the newly-inaugurated newspaper Korean People's Army. She found that it was a mere imitation of a foreign army's newspaper and that most of its articles, too, were all about the foreign army in question. Consequently it failed to distinguish itself as the organ of the KPA. This resulted from the fact that most of its journalists, editors and other officials, were former civilians with poor experience of newspaper editing.

Upon receipt of her report on this situation, Kim Il Sung arranged a six-week workshop aimed at preparing the journalists and editors politically and militarily.

On July 4, shortly after the workshop, Kim Jong Suk visited the offices of the newspaper, and gave important instructions that its articles on, for example, traditions should be on the traditions of the anti-Japanese guerrilla army, that its coverage of training should be that of the KPA servicemen and that it should establish principles in its writing and editing, true to its mission as the means of explaining and informing General Kim Il Sung's ideas and policies on military affairs and mobilizing the servicemen for their implementation.

The following day, the editorial board of the agency was informed of Kim Il Sung's instructions on releasing its inaugural edition.

On July 7, when the preparations for the said edition were in full swing, Kim Jong Suk visited the offices again. She examined the plan for the first edition, and suggested that the editorial on the front page carry a photo of General Kim Il Sung in its centre and place under the main headline part of his speech delivered at the parade of the KPA. She also pointed out some matters of which the editorial board had failed to take into account, such as inserting photos in the articles on exemplary soldiers in training, and carrying public opinions of their dignified regular army of an independent and sovereign state, or the letters of families to their

sons and daughters, brothers and husbands at their posts in defence of the homeland. She also instructed that the report of the US bombing of south Korean fishing vessels in the vicinity of Tok Island should be given prominence, so that the servicemen could nurture intense hatred of the US imperialists.

At last, the inaugural issue of the KPA newspaper was released on July 10 that year.

At lunch time that day, Kim Il Sung brought home the inaugural issue, and rejoiced over its release, speaking highly of its writing and editing.

Kim Jong Suk immediately told a senior editor over the phone that she appreciated their efforts, and informed him that Kim Il Sung spoke highly of the editing.

With the implementation of Kim Il Sung's line of army building to the letter, the KPA developed into an invincible revolutionary army and powerful modern army, demonstrating its might with the passage of time. Each and every aspect of the ever-thriving KPA would carry Kim Jong Suk's mind back to the days when the anti-Japanese guerrillas had to fight bloody battles against a better-armed opponent in the wild terrain of a foreign land, add to her joy at the long-cherished desire of the guerrillas having turned into a thrilling reality, and refresh her memory of her fallen revolutionary comrades-in-arms, her longing for them moving her to tears.

At dawn on October 14, 1948, the day when the graduation ceremony of the second-term of the Central Military Academy No. 1 was scheduled, Kim Jong Suk walked out of her house. In the garden, she met Son Jong Jun, an anti-Japanese veteran, who was waiting for Kim Il Sung to escort him to the academy. He asked her to accompany Kim Il Sung to the ceremony.

She nodded her approval, and said, "I am delighted. You probably remember the Baishitan Secret Camp, where we had a

hot debate over the establishment of a regular army after the liberation."

That day she took part in the graduation ceremony along with Kim Il Sung, and watched the graduates' tactical training combined with firing practice. Observing the graduates in action, she said, "I am very pleased to see that former workers and farmers have become masters of the country now and get education at the military academy. I am very proud of them."

After the tactical training was over, she went to the canteen and rolled up her sleeves to prepare, together with the students on cooking duty, a special meal for the cadets.

It was one of the happiest days of her life.

Years later, Kim Jong Il in a meeting with the senior officials of the Central Committee of the Workers' Party of Korea related his memory of his mother Kim Jong Suk in those days, as follows:

"On my previous visit to the Kang Kon Military Academy, I looked round the revolutionary museum exhibiting a collection of photos showing the extent to which President Kim Il Sung made painstaking effort for the building of a revolutionary regular army after liberation. I was greatly impressed. There was a photo of my parents and myself at the graduation ceremony of the second-term of the Central Military Academy No. 1 held on October 14, 1948. The photo showed my mother lowering her head; she was weeping there and then. When I asked her the reason, she answered that the ranks of stout officers reminded her of the arduous anti-Japanese armed struggle and the guerrillas who had fallen in action without seeing the event. ...

"My mother made very significant contributions to the historic cause of army building."

Indeed, nearly every aspect of army building in Korea is associated with the painstaking efforts of Kim Jong Suk, who made an ineffaceable mark in the initial steps for building an invincible army providing the utmost protection for the sky, the

land and the seas of Korea, arming all the people and turning the whole country into an impregnable fortress.

PRIMARY CONCERN FOR KOREA'S REUNIFICATION

On the night of September 22, 1981, Kim Jong Il told acquaintances:

"Rarely would there be persons who wished Korea's reunification as earnestly as my mother. Each time the anti-Japanese veterans entreated my mother to have at least one suit of clothes made for herself now that, unlike the days of struggle on Mt. Paektu, the territory had been won back, people's power had been established, and the country's wealth had been accumulated to some extent, she used to tell them that when the country was reunified--and thus all the fellow countrymen would be equally affluent--she would also live comfortably, even dressed in silk if they were. She always showed her primary concern for Korea's reunification, eschewing her personal happiness."

Korea's reunification was Kim Jong Suk's first and foremost desire and concern. After Korea's liberation, she directed all her energy and passion to hastening the day when the whole nation would live in a reunified land.

The territorial division of Korea, caused by the US occupation of south Korea under the cloak of "liberator" and "patron", was a source of misery and tragedy forced upon the Korean people. However, some Koreans were deceived by the enemy's false propaganda into harbouring illusions about the United States. Once an official told Kim Jong Suk of an awkward moment he had had to undergo in the course of his information work. According to him, a woman intellectual had asked him how she

should consider the US army in south Korea and if it would be right to regard it as a "liberator" in view of the fact that it had been part of the allied forces. The official had failed to give her a correct answer.

Kim Jong Suk told him: "During the Second World War, the United States joined the allied forces just to take the lion's share in the distribution of 'benefit from victory in the war' and hold control over the vanquished nations and its other 'allied parties', so as to translate its plan for world domination into reality. From the historical point of view, the United States had invaded Korea and plundered its natural resources, and such an enemy would not fight to its cost for Korea's liberation, would it? In fact, the US troops made their way into south Korea about 20 days after Korea's liberation, without firing a shot or shedding a drop of blood, and such troops cannot be considered 'liberators', can they? The US troops in south Korea are not 'liberators' but aggressor." She also said that he should heighten his vigilance, bearing in mind that, as a wolf cannot turn into a sheep, neither can the aggressive nature of the US imperialists.

Whenever she met officials or found herself among the people, she always broached the subject of Korea's reunification, laying bare the imperialist United States' machinations to split Korea into two, and inspiring her audience with the conviction that Korea must achieve its reunification independently by the united efforts of all its people. She paid special attention to the work of rousing the south Korean revolutionaries and personages of all walks of life to the sacred cause of reunification.

For her rich experience in the work with the masses which she had conducted from her early days of revolutionary struggle, and for her special knack of developing friendship with the people, her image was engraved in the minds of the south Korean revolutionaries, personages of all standings and the broad sections of the people as their teacher and as the focus of their admiration.

Early in 1946, Ryo Un Hyong[39] came to Pyongyang and stayed in Kim Il Sung's house for one month, during which time he enjoyed hospitality from Kim Jong Suk and perceived her personality as a great woman. Upon his return to Seoul, he frequently told his family and friends:

"In my lifetime I have met or seen many renowned women of high calibre in Korea and in other countries, but I have never met a woman like Kim Jong Suk, who is so urbane and kind-hearted, so modest and straightforward in character, though she is a famous heroine with unexcelled marksmanship and a distinguished political activist with extraordinary political awareness and acumen. I'm afraid no woman in the world can be on a par with her."

Ryo Un Hyong was among the distinguished figures in Korea in those days. In his young days, Ryo, prompted by a lofty ambition to win back his lost country, had taken part in the March First Popular Uprising in 1919, shouting, "Long live Korea's independence," had presented himself at an international conference for the right to self-determination of the nations in the East, to give full vent to the sorrow of Korea as a lesser, colonial nation, and had dealt with the "Korean Provisional Government in Shanghai".[40] He had also met self-proclaimed communist campaigners and visited many countries in Asia and Europe to meet so-called great men. Once, he had been summoned to the Japanese Imperial Palace in Tokyo, where he met the Japanese prime minister, who offered him the title of baron and the position of governor-general of Taiwan. Ryo had resolutely declined, saying that he would rather be a farmhand in liberated Korea than take a position higher than either the title of baron or governor-general. In the course of his career, he had come to despise the so-called distinguished politicians and "heroes". During his stay in Kim Il Sung's house, however, he was deeply impressed by Kim Jong Suk's

personality, and, upon his return to south Korea, did not spare his praise of her.

Later, he rejected the enemy's offer to send his two daughters studying at the Rihwa Women's University to the United States for further study. Instead, he sent them to Pyongyang, putting them into the custody of Kim Il Sung and Kim Jong Suk, a fact indicating how much he admired both the latter, and how firm was his conviction that only those two could take care of the Korean nation and bring about the national reunification.

With the arrival of 1948, greater challenges cropped up in the way of national reunification. In November 1947, after deliberately breaking up the Soviet-US joint commission, the imperialist United States had brought the issue of Korea illegally to the United Nations, where it instigated its voting machine to adopt a "resolution" on establishing a separate "government" in south Korea.

In order to cope with the prevailing situation, Kim Il Sung put forward a policy of checking and frustrating the US machinations to rig a puppet "government", by the united efforts of all the patriotic forces in the north and south of Korea. As a follow-up to this policy he initiated the holding of the Joint Conference of Representatives of Political Parties and Public Organizations in North and South Korea.

Kim Jong Suk made energetic efforts to make this joint conference an important occasion for a decisive turn in putting a brake on the US attempt at the permanent division of Korea, and for hastening the day of national reunification. When she got to know that the preparatory committee for this conference was planning to invite only six or seven women delegates from south Korea, she asked the reason. Then she advised that it had better invite as many south Korean women delegates as possible to the conference, so that they could avail themselves of the occasion to clearly understand General Kim Il Sung's intention in his initiative

of convening the conference and also to get to know the shining reality of north Korea, where the people had become the masters. Her advice was accepted, and all the south Korean women delegates who had applied for participation in the conference came to Pyongyang. When they arrived, Kim Jong Suk found their dresses different from one another, some having been torn during the crossing of the 38th parallel. She arranged for Korean women's traditional costumes to be made overnight for the 20 or so delegates so that they could attend the conference in fine dresses fitting their ages and figures.

At the conference, the south Korean women delegates, to their great delight, saw Kim Il Sung, and came to understand his proposal for national reunification. On April 27, they met Kim Il Sung and Kim Jong Suk in person, and two days later met Kim Jong Suk again. The latter asked if they were all well and inquired about any inconveniences they might have found in and out of work during their stay. She also worried that they might be longing for their families after ten days of separation. She then taught them to enlist many more women for the struggle for national salvation, true to the spirit of the joint conference. She advised them to concentrate their immediate efforts on frustrating the "May 10 separate elections"[41] and also explained other matters of principle they should adhere to in their future activities.

As the time for the south Korean women delegates to return was approaching, a senior official of the Independent Women's Union in South Korea requested another meeting with Kim Jong Suk. This union was a small women's organization under the influence of nationalists. In view of its political attitude, it was a middle-of-the-road organization. Its delegates to the conference gave a wide berth to the other delegates, and, during visits and sightseeing, took an impassive onlooker's attitude. To everyone's surprise, however, during her meeting with Kim Jong Suk, the senior official of this organization said that she would bring up the

matter of merging her union with the Democratic Women's Union in South Korea (DWUSK) upon her return to Seoul. Born into a Buddhist family, she had been influenced by nationalism so greatly since her youth that she had given the cold shoulder to both the women's organizations under communist influence and the reactionary ones of the Syngman Rhee-Kim Song Su clique. Her suggestion for the merger of her union with the DWUSK was something like a bombshell for everyone. In fact, she and her fellow delegates had come to Pyongyang with the intention of merely seeing the reality of north Korea. The things they had heard and seen, however, were all new and impressive, to their utter surprise. They learned that equality of the sexes was under the protection of the law in north Korea and that north Korean women were exercising their rights to the full as a result of fulfilment of the tasks to be tackled by the national liberation struggle and of the settlement of power problems, and that for this reason the DWUSK was inspiring the women to the struggle against the imperialist United States and its stooges, and for the reunification and independence of the homeland. Consequently, they decided to seek a merger between their own union and the DWUSK.

Kim Jong Suk said that she was glad they had got a correct understanding during their stay in Pyongyang, but expressed a different opinion with regard to their idea of a merger.

The women officials in the north and those of the Independent Women's Union had been thinking that Kim Jong Suk would welcome the proposal for the merger of the two unions.

Kim Jong Suk said that the merger of the two unions at that stage was not desirable. She explained that since the previous mottoes of the two organizations had been different, their immediate merger might result in disharmony among their members or disagreements or new attempts for the formation of a

different organization among the members of the Independent Women's Union, in consideration of its composition.

She continued, "The Independent Women's Union is made up mainly of intellectual, religious and business women with a nationalist attitude. Considering the fact that the women of these strata are not few in south Korea, the Independent Women's Union might be in a better position than the DWUSK, composed mainly of working women, in awakening such women to ideological consciousness and leading them to the anti-US, national-salvation struggle. Far from dissolving itself, the Independent Women's Union should endeavour to rally more middle-class women round itself, while taking joint actions with the DWUSK in the struggle for national reunification." This was a scientific judgement that could have been made only by an extraordinary political activist who possessed foresight and rich experience in revolutionary activities.

Deeply impressed with this scientific foresight, the senior official of the Independent Women's Union said that, bearing what Kim Jong Suk had said in mind, she and her fellow delegates would build up their union as a patriotic organization committed to the anti-US national reunification struggle in step with the activities of the DWUSK, and channel their immediate efforts into opposing "separate elections and separate government".

Afterwards, the women delegates from south Korea, who had returned following the conference, made a great contribution to the nationwide struggle to check and frustrate the "May 10 separate elections". The Independent Women's Union resolutely rejected the attempts of the US imperialists and the Syngman Rhee puppet clique to draw it into their reactionary women's organizations. When the Democratic National United Front of North Korea and the Democratic National United Front of South Korea merged into the Democratic Front for the Reunification of

the Fatherland (DFRF) in June 1949, it became its member, along with the DWUSK.

The Joint Conference of Representatives of Political Parties and Public Organizations in North and South Korea was also attended by quite a few ultra-rightist politicians from south Korea.

Kim Il Sung attached special importance to the work with Kim Ku, saying that Kim Ku's attitude during the conference would be a touchstone with which to measure the possibility of forming a united front between communists and the right-wing nationalists in south Korea.

Quite a few officials had considered that it was next to impossible to turn Kim Ku towards an alliance with communism, in view of his lifelong commitment to "anti-communism", his career as the president of the "Provisional Government in Shanghai" during Japanese colonial rule in Korea and as the head of an ultra right-wing political party, the Korean Independence Party in south Korea after Korea's liberation.

Kim Jong Suk, however, was confident that Kim Ku would follow the road of alliance with communism, so long as he cherished a national conscience and provided that he came to have a correct understanding of the popular policies and epoch-making changes in effect in the northern half of Korea and of Kim Il Sung's policy of independent national reunification.

Kim Jong Suk recommended An Sin Ho, who was well-versed in the lines and policies of the Workers' Party of Korea and who could be trusted by Kim Ku himself, for the job of work with him. An Sin Ho, younger sister of An Chang Ho who had once occupied a key position in the "Provisional Government in Shanghai", was an old and special acquaintance of Kim Ku.

After Korea's liberation, Kim Il Sung took good care of An Chang Ho's family in high appreciation for the latter's anti-Japanese patriotic spirit. He helped his younger sister An Sin Ho to become a member of the Workers' Party, and appointed her as

the chairwoman of the Women's Union in Nampho City, with a concurrent post as the vice-chairwoman of the Central Committee of the Democratic Women's Union of North Korea.

Some days prior to the conference, An Sin Ho heard, to her utter surprise, the news of Kim Ku's impending attendance at the conference from Kim Il Sung at his house. As soon as Kim Il Sung left for his office, An Sin Ho, restless and nervous, rushed to Kim Jong Suk. Finding her so upset, Kim Jong Suk offered her a seat, and asked why.

"I have just heard from General Kim Il Sung the surprising news that Kim Ku is coming to Pyongyang to participate in the joint conference," said An.

"Oh? What makes you so surprised about that? It is the General's idea that all who wish for national reunification should unite, isn't it? If Kim Ku wishes for reunification, he can also come to Pyongyang, can't he?" asked Kim Jong Suk. An replied that discussing with such a dyed-in-the-wool anti-communist as Kim Ku the matter of national reunification would be out of the question, expressing her anxiety that his attendance might make a mess of the great undertaking with regard to national reunification.

Kim Jong Suk explained to her Kim Il Sung's policy on the united front. An was impressed with her explanation. She regretted her narrow-mindedness with regard to the matter, and told Kim Jong Suk that when Kim Ku came to Pyongyang, she would tell him about Kim Il Sung's politics to the best of her knowledge.

A few days later, An called on Kim Jong Suk again. She said that, while making preparations for her talk with Kim Ku, she was at a loss as to what to say first and how to say it.

Kim Jong Suk smiled, and told her:

"It will be all right if you just tell him what you have seen, heard and felt while living in north Korea. Just the truth, without any addition or subtraction, you know.

"Kim Ku is probably obsessed with prejudice that communists shun any nationalist indiscriminately. He might be believing the vicious propaganda of some of the south Korean reactionary publications that the north Korean government has confiscated the land from its owners and distributed it among a handful of people. And he might also believe the preposterous rumour that north Korea is opposed to religion and therefore has destroyed both Buddhist temples and Christian churches.

"You must help him to understand that all such propaganda and rumours are false. And you can also tell him what General Kim Il Sung's policies are really about and how much effort the General has been making day and night for the benefit of the homeland and nation, on the basis of what you have seen and felt, can't you?

"You can tell him either about the fact that you are now working at an important post in the Women's Union or all about what you have seen with your own eyes."

At long last, An Sin Ho drew confidence and courage from what Kim Jong Suk had said, and hastened her preparations for her meeting with Kim Ku.

Kim Ku arrived in Pyongyang in mid-April, and met Kim Il Sung on the day of his arrival.

Kim Il Sung accorded Kim Ku a warm welcome, and spoke highly of the latter's arrival in Pyongyang to attend the joint conference, as a heroic attempt prompted by patriotism.

Kim Ku was delighted to meet Kim Il Sung, young and imposing, modest and kind, intelligent and passionate, the very man to represent the bright future of the nation.

Kim Ku's overbearing attitude, his sturdy body always clothed in the Korean traditional jacket and his penetrating gaze thawed under Kim Il Sung's magnanimity, as great and wide as the sea, and lofty virtue.

By the time Kim Ku returned to his lodgings, with his lingering, unforgettable meeting with Kim Il Sung in mind, An Sin Ho was there to meet him. Their meeting was very emotional. Following their greetings and exchange of inquiries into each other's doings following their separation, An gave Kim Ku a full account of what she had seen and felt as regards the reality of north Korea, especially General Kim Il Sung's great personality as the leader of the people and told him how worthwhile her life was under the benevolent care of Kim Il Sung.

Later, Kim Ku visited Kim Il Sung's birthplace at Mangyongdae, where he found Kim Il Sung's grandfather Kim Po Hyon in his eighties, still doing farm work and living a frugal life. At Mangyongdae Revolutionary School, he met the former commander of the Independence Army Ryang Se Bong's son, the child growing stoutly under the warm care of Kim Il Sung. On Mt. Ryongak, he found the temple where he had once lived in hiding, still preserved as it had been. At the Hwanghae Iron Works he saw the workers heating iron in the furnace they had rehabilitated for themselves from the wreckage that had survived destruction by the Japanese, his heart moved by their proud image representing the whole picture of the people in the north advancing with dignity. Everything was just as An Sin Ho had told him.

Prior to his return, Kim Ku met Kim Il Sung again, when he said, "I have decided to support you, General. You are the greatest figure yet to be found in world history and the one and only leader of Korea."

Upon his return to south Korea, he gave wide publicity to Kim Il Sung's great personality, and scientific political line and reunification policy, and devoted himself heart and soul to alliance with communism and reunification in wholehearted support of Kim Il Sung's line and policy.

As far as the matter of national reunification was concerned, Kim Jong Suk led the relevant officials to constantly hold fast to

independent stand and combine the struggle for national reunification closely with the international struggle against imperialism and fascism.

An enlarged meeting of the Central Committee of the Democratic Women's Union of North Korea held in January 1949 gave a formal hearing to the activities of the Korean delegation to the Second Congress of the Women's International Democratic Federation, and decided to convoke a conference of active members of the Women's Union to discuss appropriate measures for the work with the WIDF.

In a meeting with the officials of the Central Committee of the Women's Union, Kim Jong Suk said that a basic underlying ideal of the Second Congress of the WIDF was to oppose fascism and imperialism, safeguard the peace and security of the world, and protect the rights of women being downtrodden by the oppressors, and suggested that it would be appropriate to gear the forthcoming conference to opening up a phase favourable for the Korean people's struggle for the building of a new society and for the reunification of their country.

She said:

"For this reason, I suggest that the conference should not be a conference of activists of only the Women's Union in the north but be a national meeting with the participation of many south Korean delegates."

Then she suggested that the conference adopt an appeal to this effect.

Later, in consultation with the south Korean women's organizations, the officials of the Central Committee of the Women's Union decided to convene a national meeting, and adopt an appeal to women throughout the country at this meeting.

Having been informed of the plan, Kim Il Sung was satisfied, and named it the All-Korea Conference of Women Activists.

While checking the draft of the appeal, Kim Jong Suk said that the main objective of the conference was to lead all the women of the north and the south to fan the flames of struggle against US imperialism and for independent national reunification, and especially to inspire the patriotic women in the south to join the struggle. In light of this, she suggested, the appeal should be evolved with the matter of anti-US, anti-puppet struggle and national reunification as its basic idea, and call to the south Korean women as its basic content, rather than be centred on the matter of economic construction in the north.

The All-Korea Conference of Women Activists held in Pyongyang on February 6 that year adopted an appeal, which was given wide publicity among all the women in the north and the south through mass media and various women's organizations, proving its worth in forcefully rousing the masses of Korean women to the anti-US struggle for national salvation.

The patriotic women in the south turned out to stage street demonstrations, calling for the immediate withdrawal of the US occupation army and the overthrow of the puppet Syngman Rhee's "regime", and either took part in brisk guerrilla warfare in all parts of south Korea or rendered assistance to the guerrilla struggle.

Kim Jong Suk took meticulous care of the revolutionaries coming to Pyongyang in the process of their engagement in the struggle for revolution in south Korea and for national reunification, among them Song Si Baek and a couple from Jeju Island Kang Kyu Chang and his wife Ko Jin Hui.

During his stay in Pyongyang, Song Si Baek visited Mangyongdae one Sunday in August 1948, when he delivered his greetings to Kim Il Sung's grandparents Kim Po Hyon and Ri Po Ik. As he was resting under the shade of an aspen tree planted and tended by Kim Il Sung's father Kim Hyong Jik, Kim Jong Suk came out to receive him.

"What great difficulties you must be going through while working in the enemy-held area, sir! I sincerely hope you will regain your health while resting in Pyongyang," she said.

Song asked her to tell him about her rich experience in underground work during her days of anti-Japanese armed struggle. She declined his request courteously, saying that her experience was not worth hearing. Upon his earnest and repeated requests, she related her experiences as follows: "According to my experience in underground work among villagers during my days of anti-Japanese armed struggle, I think it most important in the underground struggle to set one's footing firmly among the masses of the people. One cannot succeed in this struggle unless one mingles intimately with the popular masses, and gains full support and encouragement from them."

That day, she referred to the need to recognize the hard-core elements among the masses and train them before anything else, build up underground revolutionary organizations with the hard core as the backbone and rally the broad masses of the people round the organizations, the need to arrange a tight cover for a new organization to be formed or for the expansion of the organizational network, the matter of making a clear distinction of friend from foe and heightening revolutionary vigilance, and all other matters of principle to be adhered to in underground activities in the enemy-held area. She added, "A matter of paramount importance in the underground struggle is that each time one is faced with manifold difficulties, one must not act in a hasty or confused manner, but, instead, work composedly and determinedly with a firm revolutionary conviction that one will only believe in General Kim Il Sung and follow him."

Song Si Baek was so impressed with her remarks that, upon his return to south Korea, he made efforts to expand the network of the underground organizations and launch a daring struggle, thus rendering a tangible contribution to frustrating the enemy's crafty

moves against the north. In this process he came to be arrested. Till the last moment of his life, he was faithful to his revolutionary principles.

Kang Kyu Chang and his wife Ko Jin Hui were revolutionaries who made contributions to establishing a people's committee on Jeju Island after Korea's liberation, and devoted themselves to the struggle to introduce Kim Il Sung's politics throughout south Korea. They waged an armed struggle against the imperialist United States' scheme for "separate elections and a separate government" in south Korea, before coming over to the north, to Kim Il Sung in March 1948, leaving their four sons and daughters behind.

Kim Il Sung ensured that Kang Kyu Chang worked on the Party Central Committee and that Ko Jin Hui took up an important post on the people's committee of Pyongyang City. When both of them were elected to the Supreme People's Assembly by the south Korean people and attended a session of the SPA, Kim Il Sung met them again, and praised them highly as representatives of the people of Jeju Island.

Kim Jong Suk met Ko Jin Hui on several occasions, and took meticulous care of her in and out of work. When Ko was enrolled as a student at the Central Higher Cadres Training School, Kim Jong Suk met her again, and encouraged her to study hard with pride in being a student and, at the same time, a Deputy to the SPA.

In the process of her conversations with Ko several times, Kim Jong Suk came across the fact that Ko was very worried about her four children in south Korea. Upon receipt of Kim Jong Suk's report of this fact, Kim Il Sung arranged for the children to be brought to Pyongyang. With the arrival of the children, Ko's family moved to a new house, where they found a set of furniture, quilts, rice and even side-dishes that had been provided by Kim Jong Suk. Some days later, Kim Jong Suk called at Ko's new house, and showed maternal love for the family, holding the children in her arms. She told Ko that

after Korea's reunification both of them would go to Lake Paeknok on Mt. Halla (on Jeju Island-Tr.), in the company of Kim Il Sung, and that at that time she would see Ko riding on a horse at the foot of Mt. Halla, pumping passion for national reunification into the hearts of the couple.

As soon as the Fatherland Liberation War broke out, the couple plunged into the battles at the front, and into the struggle in the enemy-held areas to liberate their hometown, courageously fighting to the last moment of their lives, thus making a great contribution to hastening the victory in the war, and promoting the cause of national reunification.

12. LOFTY FEELINGS OF OBLIGATION AND AFFECTION

WITH THE BEREAVED CHILDREN OF THE REVOLUTIONARY MARTYRS

Meeting with the anti-Japanese revolutionary veterans one day just after returning to the homeland in triumph, Kim Il Sung said, "We must locate all the bereaved families and children of our comrades-in-arms, who are scattered to unknown places in the flames of the war, and take good care of them. The martyrs requested that we educate their children to be revolutionaries, didn't they? I never forgot their last will, even in the hard days of fighting. We have to find every one of their children and other surviving family members, take good care of them and give them a good education so that the children all may become full-fledged revolutionaries true to the will of their parents."

In the days of the anti-Japanese war, Kim Il Sung had trained the children of the fallen comrades to be revolutionaries at the CC schools in the guerrilla zones, and Kim Jong Suk had looked after them as their mothers and sisters would have done. The history of the children's company of the main-force unit of the KPRA that had left indelible traces in the revolutionary history of Korea was associated with the lofty feelings of revolutionary obligation and affection Kim Il Sung and Kim Jong Suk cherished.

Early one morning in June 1942, Kim Il Sung and Kim Jong Suk took a stroll by the Sobaek Stream at the Paektusan Secret Camp, discussing how to find all the children of the martyrs after the liberation of the country and bring them up as fine revolutionaries.

After liberation, Kim Il Sung found himself quite busy every day. He had to push ahead with the work of founding and strengthening the Party and people's power, carrying out the great tasks of democratic reforms and consolidating the success of the revolution, undertaking the task of putting the national economy on a planned footing and building the regular revolutionary armed forces.

Busy as he was, Kim Il Sung saw to it that the Association of Supporters of the Anti-Japanese Fighters was organized in March 1946, an organization aimed at rendering social and national assistance to the children and other family members of the revolutionary martyrs, and Mangyongdae Revolutionary School, a school for such children, and the committee for enrolling students for the school were founded the following year. And he sent a number of anti-Japanese veterans and officials to various parts of the country in order to find the martyrs' children and bring them to Pyongyang.

Kim Jong Suk met the veterans and officials, and told them that they should not return after one or two failures, but locate the children and bring them, even if it took one or two months.

In the summer of 1947, Rim Chun Chu was assigned to go to eastern Manchuria to bring to Pyongyang the children of the revolutionary martyrs scattered in Northeast China. Kim Jong Suk met him, and, recollecting one by one the revolutionary comrades-in-arms who had fallen in action during the anti-Japanese war, encouraged him in his task, saying that he would be able to find all of them if he was determined to go to the end of the earth to locate them.

Until then, she was not aware whether her own family members were still alive or not, but she was eager to live up to the last wishes of her fallen comrades-in-arms by finding all their children, give them a good education and train them to be reliable successors of the revolution.

Thanks to the measures taken by Kim Il Sung and the efforts made by Kim Jong Suk, a great number of children of the revolutionary martyrs were brought to Pyongyang.

Kim Jong Suk, concerned with the construction of a building where the children would study temporarily, visited the site in Kan-ri one day. Helping the workers, she told them the significance of the school, and encouraged them to do their work with all sincerity, as children who had been maltreated and experienced all sorts of hardships would live here.

In early August 1947, on receiving a report that children of martyrs had arrived, Kim Jong Suk, in company with Kim Il Sung, left for Kan-ri.

When the car entered the yard of the school, the children who were playing there rushed to the car, shouting "Long live General Kim Il Sung!" How eagerly they had longed for the fatherly Kim Il Sung!

A few steps in front of him, they stopped and hesitated to come farther. The unlined jackets revealing their shoulders, hempen trousers worn out at the knees, frayed straw sandals.... They were too ashamed of their shabby appearance.

Kim Jong Suk embraced them, and said, sternly: "The General doesn't care about your worn-out clothes. You aren't to blame for your poor clothes and hard lives."

She pushed them to Kim Il Sung.

Only then did the children move into the arms of Kim Il Sung, bursting into tears.

Kim Il Sung said in a voice filled with tears: "It's all right. Don't cry. You shall get good clothes and go to school. ... Everything will be all right."

That day, Kim Il Sung told Kim Jong Suk that they had to ensure production of school uniforms as well as shoes and caps for the children as soon as possible.

Concerning herself with the preparations for the opening of the school, Kim Jong Suk paid attention to the manufacturing of the school uniforms.

Going over the design for the uniforms, she gave her opinion to the designers, saying, "We are making uniforms for a revolutionary school. So, the uniform must follow the style of a military uniform, and have red lines on the sleeves and trousers, representing the inheritance of the traditions of the anti-Japanese revolution."

When the design was finished, she rendered active assistance to the production of the uniforms, frequently visiting the sewing shop in the school and a garment factory, so as to ensure that the students were supplied with uniforms before the opening of the school.

One day, when the school was yet to be opened, she called some children to her house. Examining their uniforms, she said, "In new clothes, you look quite presentable."

She found that the uniform of one girl was not a proper fit.

"We requested the tailors to mend the clothes that are not a proper fit. Why do you wear such one without having it repaired?"

The girl answered that she had hidden her clothes without giving to the tailor, for fear that she could not take them back after mending.

Kim Jong Suk said, embracing her in her arms, "You must have done so, because they are new clothes you first put on. General Kim Il Sung has given them to you, and no one will take them away from you."

She repaired the girl's uniform and pleated the skirt with iron.

One day she heard that a batch of children of martyrs, who had been wandering in eastern Manchuria, had arrived. She sent for them.

Tears rolled down her cheeks as she saw the children entering the yard of her house. "Where have you been? Three years have passed since the country's liberation, but you have come only now. Do you know how long General Kim Il sung has been looking for you?" she cried.

The children shed tears too. Inside the house, she asked each child who his father and mother were. Reminded of the fallen comrades-in-arms, she held the children again in her arms, saying, "You must have experienced difficulties without your fathers and mothers."

As she was brushing tears away from their faces, she noticed that the trousers of a boy worn out at the knee.

"Your trousers are worn out. Take them off please. I will mend them."

The boy moved aside, grasping the waist-band tightly.

"It seems you have not put on underwear. If your mother was alive, she would have bought you underwear. Come on; I can mend the trousers without taking them off you."

Finding the image of his own mother in Kim Jong Suk, the boy buried his face in her bosom, crying, "Mother!"

Kim Jong Suk patted him on the head, saying, "You are a big boy. Stop crying. When you go to school, you will receive a new uniform given by General Kim Il Sung."

A woman nearby offered to do the job.

Kim Jong Suk said, shaking her head, "No. Breathing their last, the children's parents entrusted them to General Kim Il Sung. So I am their mother now. I must do the work myself."

This scene moved the children and officials around her.

On the 12th of October 1947, Mangyongdae Revolutionary School, the successor to the CC schools of the days of the anti-Japanese struggle, opened. Taking part in the opening ceremony, Kim Jong Suk congratulated the schoolchildren.

In subsequent days, she concerned herself with the school work in order to bring the children up as revolutionaries faithful to Kim Il Sung, as the backbone of the Party, state and army.

On the 23rd of October, 1947, the deputy principal of the school for political affairs came to her house at the call of Kim Il Sung. Kim Jong Suk welcomed him and said to him that General Kim Il Sung had gone to his office to take an urgent telephone call. She asked him to have a talk with her in the meantime on how to conduct the education of the children.

He thought it was an appropriate time, and said,

"I have little experience in education, and so I have long wished to have a chance to hear your opinion, as you have rich experience in the work of the Children's Corps."

"I am not much of an educationalist," Kim Jong Suk said. "Today, Mangyongdae Revolutionary School, successor to the anti-Japanese Children's Corps schools, is faced with the important task of bringing up the students as the backbone of the Party, state and army of the liberated country. In particular, it is

the first task of the school to train a great number of military commanders.

"As you know, there appeared in the Party various 'isms' and opinions opposed to the line of General Kim Il Sung just after the country's liberation. The school must educate all the children of martyrs as true Korean revolutionaries equipped with the idea of General Kim Il Sung and ready to dedicate their lives in the way indicated by him, as their parents did in the past."

She continued to give her opinion on how to educate the children through teaching and after-class activities, and how to give efficient military education, including such subjects as marksmanship.

"The children find it very difficult to learn natural sciences, as they had no systematic education in their early days," said the deputy principal of the school.

"Nevertheless," Kim Jong Suk said, "you teachers should not lose confidence. Without general knowledge of natural sciences, it is impossible to learn modern military science. You should explain this to them well so that they can overcome difficulties and master the knowledge of natural sciences."

When the subject of the school curriculum came up, the deputy principal said that he thought it would be good to teach the same subjects to both boys and girls, as the students were all to become the backbone of the Party, state and army.

Acknowledging the worth of his opinion, she said that they should not neglect to teach the subject of housework to the girl students, for it was important for the girls to acquire womanly looks, and know how to cook and make clothes.

She also gave him her opinion on moral and physical education.

She said, "General Kim Il Sung, when he visited a newly-built school in Taedong County, named it Samhung Middle School, and said that students must be brought up as pillars of new Korea, qualified intellectually, morally and physically.

Mangyongdae Revolutionary School must educate its students as General Kim Il Sung instructed.

"The students of the revolutionary school, bereft of their parents in their early years, have not received proper family education. We must educate them to acquire lofty moral traits, so that they would be well-mannered, respect their seniors, love their fellows and devote themselves to benefiting their fellows and the collective."

Asking him to educate the children as revolutionaries as stout as their parents, who had remained loyal to the revolutionary creed and duty to the last, she gave her opinion on the problems raised in the work of the revolutionary school, such as intensifying study and organizational life among the students, providing them with good living conditions, training them through sports and labour, and improving supply services for them.

On March 20, 1948, Kim Jong Suk accompanied Kim Il Sung to the shooting range at Mangyongdae Revolutionary School.

At that time, the students were intent on target practice for the forthcoming live firing exercise.

Looking at the children, she said to an official of the school: "Hardly half a year has passed since they began to study in this school, and they have grown up beyond recognition. How pleased their parents would be if only they could see their children now."

She helped them to keep a correct posture for firing.

That day, Kim Il Sung conducted a demonstration of shooting for the students, and handed the pistol to Kim Jong Suk.

She took the pistol, and fired three shots.

As the pistol shots rang out, three bottles standing at a distance shattered.

After the demonstration, a girl student asked Kim Jong Suk how she had learned to shoot so well.

Kim Jong Suk told her that one must shoot not with the hand but with the heart, and with burning hatred of the enemy. Then one would never miss the target.

Her words instilled in the hearts of the students not only the secret of marksmanship, but something greater-a sense of the attitude a revolutionary with arms should acquire.

Kim Jong Suk looked after the children of the revolutionary school as their mothers would have done.

In the late autumn of 1947, a number of the schoolchildren complained of high fever.

To prevent Kim Il Sung and Kim Jong Suk worrying, the principal of the school decided to report the state of affairs only after the sickness had been brought under control, and organized medical treatment.

Around that time, Kim Jong Suk happened to visit the school. On hearing about the outbreak of fever, she went to the room where the sick students were kept in isolation. A woman who was nursing them, stood in her way, saying that nobody was allowed to go into the room, as the sickness was epidemic.

"Then, what about you?" asked Kim Jong Suk.

"I am a staff member of this school. And it would not be a serious matter if I fell ill. But I can't allow you in; you have to attend to General Kim Il Sung," the woman said earnestly.

The officials of the school too tried their best to dissuade her from entering the room.

Kim Jong Suk said, "The revolutionary comrades-in-arms who fell in the fight for the country's liberation entrusted their children to us. So I must see them. Would a parent not go to see his or her child suffering from a high fever on the grounds that the child is suffering from an epidemic disease? Just now, they might be yearning for their dear mothers."

Without any hesitation, she entered the room. After studying the conditions of the patients for a long while, she said that they

had taken a turn for the better, and asked the officials of the school to do their utmost for the prevention and treatment of such epidemics.

Back home, she prepared kimchi with dropwort, made toffee from glutinous rice and obtained medicines. She sent these to the school. And she organized medical check-ups for all the school children and treatment for the slightest pathological symptoms.

One Sunday in the autumn of that year, two children from the school came to her house.

Kim Jong Suk, while enjoying the day with them, noticed signs of illness on the face of one girl, signs even the medical check-up had failed to discover. She saw to it that the girl was sent to hospital at once.

The first visitors' day since her admittance to the hospital came. Other children were in a festive mood, waiting for their relatives. One of them asked her, innocently: "Who will be coming to see you?"

Perplexed for an answer, the girl lay back, and shut her eyes. But, she was the first to receive notice of a visitor, and her mother at that.

"Mother?"

She sat up in bed, opening her eyes in wonder.

Kim Jong Suk entered the room. She hurried to the girl's bedside, and embraced her, saying, "You must have missed me. How are you now?"

The girl burst into tears. Clinging tightly to Kim Jong Suk, the girl cried, "Mother! My dear mother!"

Seeing her in good health on the day she was discharged from hospital after three and a half months, Kim Il Sung was very pleased. He said, "Well, well, well, you look healthy and have grown so tall that I can hardly recognize you."

One day during the summer vacation in 1948, the girl visited Kim Jong Suk's house. While she was reading a book in the

garden, Kim Jong Suk was dyeing a piece of cloth pink in a washtub.

The girl urged her to take a rest.

Kim Jong Suk continued her work, saying, "Never mind. Go on reading. I cannot sit idle even for a moment."

Some days later, when the girl was presented with the pink-coloured outdoor clothes Kim Jong Suk had made for her, she shed tears of gratitude for her maternal love.

Busy as she was, Kim Jong Suk often found time to visit the school, and on Sundays she waited from early morning for students from the school to come to her house. When she ran into any of the students in the street, she would take them to her house. In the kimchi-making season (pickling Korean cabbage and radish for winter provisions-Tr.), she went to the school to give a helping hand, and on the New Year's Days shared the New Year feast with the children at the school.

When the son of an underground operative of the KPRA was admitted to the revolutionary school, she went to the school to meet him. She even gave him her favourite fountain-pen from her days in the guerrilla army.

Thanks to the loving care of Kim Jong Suk, the Mangyongdae students were brought up to be revolutionaries faithful to the Party, the backbone who would reliably inherit the traditions of the revolution.

In cherished memory of her, the offspring of the revolutionary martyrs, who have now become sturdy leading officials of the Korean revolution, say as one:

"Kim Jong Suk is our own mother."

In his recollection of Kim Jong Suk, Kim Il Sung said as follows: "Kim Jong Suk lived all her life not for herself, but for her comrades. Her life started with love for her comrades, and developed on the basis of that feeling. In the course of this, she became a prominent revolutionary who displayed communist moral qualities to the fullest extent. All that she did throughout her life was for her comrades, her fellows and for the revolution. She did nothing for her own benefit. She never thought of herself at all. 'I can endure hunger, cold and pain. I am satisfied if my comrades do not feel hunger, cold or pain. If I can save my comrades from danger at the cost of my own life, I will face death with a smile, with no regrets.'-This was her outlook on life."

Jang Chol Gu said that she was a very difficult woman to part from.

So Sun Ok who had been together with Kim Jong Suk in the same unit under Kim Il Sung's personal command, never forgot her. Kim Jong Suk took loving care of So, then only 16 years old, sometimes covering the latter with her own blanket and hugging her tight to warm her body on cold days. At the time when they had to part from each other at the training base, Kim Jong Suk gave So her only blanket as a memento, the blanket she had long used with a feeling of attachment and shared with the latter. Kim Jong Suk used to carry on her back a knapsack, too large for others to recognize its carrier, yet the blanket on top of the knapsack would indicate who the carrier was.

Just before their parting, So Sun Ok was reluctant to release her hands from Kim Jong Suk's, weeping all the while. Kim Jong Suk put the blanket into So's knapsack, saying in a soothing tone: "Please take this as a memento. It is not a new one, but I want you never to forget that it is soaked with my warmth, the warmth of your loving elder sister."

So Sun Ok kept the blanket with the greatest care for over half a century. When she visited Korea, her homeland, in August 1992, So respectfully presented it to Kim Il Sung as a souvenir. Now it is displayed in the Korean Revolution Museum.

When the young veterans of the anti-Japanese struggle got married in the liberated homeland, Kim Jong Suk arranged their wedding banquets.

Ri Ul Sol still remembers, with deep emotion, his simple wedding banquet arranged with bean sprouts under Kim Jong Suk's care.

Kim Jong Suk, after Ri's marriage, frequently bought various side dishes for his family.

When Kim Il Sung initiated Thae Pyong Ryol's marriage, she also arranged the wedding table and took continual care of Thae's newly-wed life.

Thanks to the loving care of both Kim Il Sung and Kim Jong Suk, not only the young veterans, including Kim Myong Jun, Son Jong Jun, Ri O Song and Kang Sang Ho, but also the widowed old veterans were able to lead married lives.

Kim Jong Suk's warm love for her revolutionary comrades was extended to their bereaved families.

In March 1948, the families of O Thae Hui and O Chang Hui whose sons-O Jung Hwa, O Jung Hup and O Jung Song-had all fallen in action during the anti-Japanese war came to Pyongyang from Northeast China.

Upon the news of their arrival, Kim Jong Suk immediatly went to their lodging. Old man O Thae Hui and his family members rushed outdoors with bare feet and were about to bow to her. Taking them by the hands, she greeted them first, saying, "Grandfathers and grandmothers, what a hard life you must have led...."

Choked with tears, she could not finish her sentence. All the family members sobbed, and even old man O Thae Hui, who had

never shown dismay at any heart-breaking news in the past, shed thick tears over the back of Kim Jong Suk's hands.

"As you have taken good care of General Kim Il Sung by reflecting the ardent desire of all the Korean people even on the rugged road of struggle against the vicious Japanese," old man O Thae Hui said, "We have come to tread our precious land of bright Korea again."

"Grandfathers! Our joy at this moment owes a great deal to your sons' sacrifice with unfailing loyalty to the General," she said.

She met them again at her own house that afternoon, when she suggested that one of the three daughters-in-law take care of the parents-in-law and the other two work at Mangyongdae Revolutionary School.

Even after they moved to a new house, which Kim Il Sung provided for them, Kim Jong Suk looked after them. On the eve of New Year 1949, she sent them glutinous rice, meat and other side dishes, as well as candies, fruits and even firewood to help them enjoy the New Year's Day happily. On the New Year's Day she visited their house again.

Telling them that her spending New Year's Day in the warm house reminded her of a New Year's Day she had enjoyed together with O Jung Hup in the snow-covered mountains and that the dream they had dreamt had turned into reality, Kim Jong Suk said, "You grandfathers took the trouble to assist the anti-Japanese guerrilla army and sacrificed your sons in the struggle for national liberation. Now that Korea is liberated, I want you to live long and bring up your grandchildren as fine revolutionaries, holding the General in the greatest esteem."

Kim Jong Suk told the children that they should become pillars of the country and work to the last in support of General Kim Il Sung, as their fathers had done. Upon returning home, she felt so uneasy about the light clothes

worn by the old men that she sent them materials for making new clothing.

When Choe Chae Ryon, Ri Je Sun's wife, came to Pyongyang from Kilju, Kim Jong Suk went as far as the gate to receive her.

Relating her meeting with Ri Je Sun at the Heixiazigou Secret Camp, Kim Jong Suk told Choe that her husband had been very faithful to the revolutionary principles to the last moment of his life, and encouraged her to bring up her children well, so that they could carry on what their father had had to leave unfulfilled halfway.

Enjoying Kim Jong Suk's hospitality, Choe spent happy days at the former's house. Busy as she was, Kim Jong Suk spent a lot of time with Choe, together climbing Moran Hill, walking to the pier on the Taedong River, and showing her a film. She also arranged for Choe's attendance at the banquet in celebration of May Day, as instructed by Kim Il Sung.

Kim Jong Suk asked Choe to send her children to Mangyongdae Revolutionary School, to bring them up as fine revolutionaries as wished by General Kim Il Sung, and said to her: "I cannot sleep properly due to my preoccupation with worries as to how I can find all the children of the deceased revolutionaries and send them to Mangyongdae Revolutionary School, how I can dress them well, feed them properly, and make them feel content and protected, and which colour and which type of clothes will suit them."

Kim Jong Suk's warm kindness extended to Pak Tal, an anti-Japanese revolutionary, helping him enjoy a cheerful and happy life in the last years of his life. Pak Tal had been incarcerated in Sodaemun Prison and crippled by cruel torture inflicted on him by the Japanese imperialists. After Korea's liberation he was freed from the prison, and received hospital treatment, before coming up to Pyongyang and meeting Kim Jong Suk.

"Comrade Pak Tal!"

"Comrade Kim Jong Suk!"

That was their third meeting. The first time was in the Heixiazigou Secret Camp at the foot of Mt. Paektu, and the second was in the Chonsangsu Cave.

Kim Jong Suk spoke highly of his uncompromising struggle behind bars till Korea's liberation and encouraged him to receive medical treatment in real earnest.

Kim Il Sung provided him with a house next door to his. Kim Jong Suk concerned herself with furnishing his house and his moving into it. During the period of preparing kimchi, she made it for him.

Her house was always crowded with visitors- anti-Japanese veterans, former underground workers in the Taoquanli and Sinpha areas, and Ri Ju Yon, Ri Yong and Ri Young and other former fighters in the homeland who were now working at key posts of the Party and government. Kim Jong Suk always welcomed them, gave them her earnest opinions of their work, and asked about their lives.

Kim Jong Suk devoted herself to the interests of the Korean working masses, who had been exploited and deprived of their rights in the past, in order to bring them up as the masters of the country, and loyal supporters of Kim Il Sung.

Still popular among the local people of Myongchon like a legend is a story woven at dawn when the train from Chongjin to Pyongyang stopped at the Myongchon station.

Kim Chol Ho, who was on cooking duty that day, got up early to fetch water. Yet, she saw Kim Jong Suk move outdoors with a bucket. All the landscape was covered with snow. Both of them reached a well nearby, but could not draw water from it, as there was no dipper. It was still dawn, and no woman had come out to draw water as yet. Kim Chol Ho saw a dipper nearby, and was about to bring it.

But Kim Jong Suk dissuaded her, and proposed waiting a little while for the mistress of the house to get up. She began to silently sweep away the snow from around the well. The mistress did not appear until the sweeping was over. Fretting about the possible leaving of the train and late breakfast, Kim Chol Ho was again going to wake up the family. Kim Jong Suk said, "We should prefer to take the trouble of waiting patiently than wake them up from their sound sleep."

Then she began to sweep the yard of the house. It was not until she had finished sweeping away the snow in the yard that the mistress came out, only to be nonplussed by the scene. The mistress did not know who the kind-hearted and broad-minded lady was, but she stood gazing at her for a long time, feeling as if the new image of the liberated homeland was reflected in her personality.

In those days, although the country had been liberated, the Korean people's appearance still bore the reflections of their bitter suffering as a formerly colonized nation.

Kim Jong Suk always concerned herself with helping the people to lead, as soon as possible, a new worthwhile life provided by Kim Il Sung and hold them up as the masters of liberated Korea.

An anecdote about her love for the people still survives.

On April 12, 1947, she visited the Pyongyang Silk Mill, taking her son along. After hearing officials give a briefing on the state of production of the factory and the living conditions of the workers, she began to look round the production processes. When she walked through the cocoon screening workshop to the filature workshop, the officials asked her not to enter it, blocking her way and saying that the place was in an awful state. In fact, the workplace filled with steam, water dripped from the ceiling and a suffocating smell of boiled cocoons was all over the place. ...

However, Kim Jong Suk said to them, "Girl silk reelers are working there, so why cannot we go inside? I have come here to see them work. Let us go, shall we?" She entered the workshop first.

She walked up to a girl selecting the cocoons floating in hot water. Kim Jong Suk dipped her fingers in the water, as hot as 80 degrees Centigrade, and silently took the hands of the girl for a while, her heart torn apart over such harsh working conditions. After a little while, she gave an affectionate stroke to the girl's shoulder, worrying how much painful the girl must be feeling in her hands. She continued to say that now that the working masses had become the masters of the liberated country, the girl would also be able to enjoy a most cheerful and happy life proudly, and work in healthy conditions. She then told the officials: "The hardships and ill-treatment our people suffered before liberation were great enough to break our hearts. Now that the country is liberated, we can not bear to see the girls' hands damaged continually, can we? I have heard that many orphaned girls are working in this factory, so I want you to act as their parents, and take good care of them."

She advised the officials to make rubber aprons for the girls so that they would not get wet by the splashing water, and to install ventilators to prevent unwholesome air from affecting the workers.

On her way across a yard towards the spinning workshop, Kim Jong Suk saw high fences with barbed wire entanglements round the factory, which had been set up by the Japanese before liberation to prevent the escape of the girls they had taken there by force. "Why are you still keeping those disgusting barbed wire entanglements that make all who see them shudder with horror?" She demanded. "It makes me sick even to think that the Japanese bled our people white in such a dreadful way. How heart-rending must it be for the girls of this factory when they see them! We fought

tenaciously in the mountains in order to pull down such fetters as that fence, didn't we! Let us throw away the barbed wire and pull down the fences to treat the aching wounds in the hearts of our women."

That day, Kim Jong Suk visited the workers' hostel, and then left the factory.

Upon receipt of her report on the state of affairs at the factory Kim Il Sung gave on-the-spot guidance to the factory a few days later. He sent a lot of blankets and kitchenware, oiled floor paper, various medicines, rubber aprons and side dishes.

Kim Jong Suk's love for the people is evident in every factory and farm and fishing village and anywhere she visited, and is still fresh in the minds of all the people she met--workers, farmers, intellectuals, businessmen and merchants.

One day in the early summer of 1946, Kim Jong Suk went to see a doctor of traditional Koryo medicine for treatment of an unhealed wound she had sustained during the anti-Japanese armed struggle. Having refused to send for the doctor and also her aide's proposal of taking a car for the purpose, she walked down the street.

It was just a few minutes later that an official in charge of youth affairs at the Central Organizing Committee of the Communist Party of North Korea, saw her trudging along, and rushed to her. Learning where she was going and why, he ran and brought a rickshaw pulled by an old man. But Kim Jong Suk said in an angry tone of voice: "We did not fight, eating grass roots and sleeping on snow just to swagger in a rickshaw after liberating the homeland. The struggle of our revolutionaries is, in all respects, aimed at freeing the people from all sorts of exploitation and oppression and build a new society in which all the people will enjoy freedom on an equal footing. You must endeavour to eliminate the inequality of man carrying man, rather than taking the trouble of looking for a rickshaw for someone else."

Tears streamed down the old rickshawman's face, as if to pour out his pent-up sorrow.

Kim Jong Suk stepped towards the old man, and said, "Please, forgive this young man. He didn't know my mind."

She said good-bye to the old man, and resumed walking.

The old man suddenly pulled his rickshaw up to Kim Jong Suk, and said, beseechingly: "I have so far carried only the rich. This will be my last trip, and I want to proudly carry such a noble-minded person as you.

Holding his hands in hers, Kim Jong Suk said, "You still don't understand, old man, do you? Under the leadership of General Kim Il Sung, the sun of our Korean nation, I fought against the Japanese to win back the lost country and build in the liberated homeland a new society which can provide previously ill-treated and poor people like you with equal and affluent lives. How can I ride in your rickshaw in our own country liberated at the cost of the lives of many revolutionary martyrs just because I feel a little physical discomfort? I am grateful for your offer, anyway."

After that, rickshawmen gradually disappeared from the streets of Pyongyang. They went to the factories or construction sites, to live as dignified human beings, as the masters of the new Korea.

Agrarian reform and other democratic reforms after Korea's liberation proceeded amidst a fierce class struggle against the reactionaries, entailing heart-breaking losses, including the death of Kim Hye Son, who was the chairman of the rural committee of Song-ri No. 2, Songthae Sub-county, Kangso County, South Phyongan Province and met Kim Il Sung and Kim Jong Suk on their visit to his village. While devoting himself to the successful accomplishment of the land reform, he was killed by the reactionaries on April 9, 1946.

Upon the news of his death, Kim Jong Suk, on April 10, went to Song-ri No. 2, which was crawling with the reactionaries, met the bereaved family, and arranged Kim Hye Son's funeral at state

level as instructed by Kim Il Sung. She formed a commission for the funeral, sent for the central military band and worked out the memorial address, so that the farmer, killed by the enemy, could be remembered forever.

In August the following year Kim Jong Suk went to Kyongsong County, North Hamgyong Province, to make preparations for Kim Il Sung's forthcoming on-the-spot guidance to the province in September that year. There, she met Chae Hui, chairwoman of the trade union of the spinning department of Chongjin Spinning Mill, who was on leave at a spa.

Chae, who had been given a holiday card and sent there by the Party committee of her mill, was beside herself with joy when she met Kim Jong Suk there unexpectedly.

It was when Kim Jong Suk was working in Chongjin immediately after Korea's liberation that both of them had come to know each other.

One morning, a woman in rags came to the two-storey house where Kim Jong Suk had been staying, to beg for food. Directly she saw Kim Jong Suk in military uniform open the door, the woman ran away helter-skelter. That woman was Chae Hui.

Kim Jong Suk summoned a Women's Union official and got her to send for the beggar. Kim Jong Suk received the beggar kindly at the gate. She seated Chae beside her and held Chae's chapped hands, asking her name and age. Kim Jong Suk's kindness reminded Chae of the humiliations to which she had been subjected as a "beggar", making her rush out of the house, unable to bear her sorrow over her lot.

The following day, Kim Jong Suk went to the slum area to meet Chae again. Upon hearing from the Women's Union official that the woman in military uniform was none other than Kim Jong Suk, an anti-Japanese heroine, Chae related to Kim Jong Suk her past career which had remained untold so far.

Listening to her tearful story, Kim Jong Suk combed Chae's hair, and arranged her clothes properly.

"Cheer up. If you study from now on and take part in nation building, you will surely become a woman as competent as the others."

She infused Chae with confidence and courage for a new life till nightfall, and then unwrapped her bundle.

"I don't have much to give you right now," Kim Jong Suk said. "But after long deliberation, I have brought this for you. Please take it, such as it is."

The bundle contained a military uniform.

Kim Jong Suk dressed Chae in the uniform. Looking at her with an air of satisfaction, Kim Jong Suk said Chae looked like a woman recruit of the KPRA.

That day, she went directly to the Chongjin Public Security Station, and advised the security men to distribute cloth or rice, if they had any, among the confiscated property of the enemy, to the poor families as soon as possible. She also asked them to take good care of Chae in the slum area.

Some days later, Kim Jong Suk dropped in at the public security station again, and requested them to look for the location of Chae Hui's maiden home, somewhere in Hoeryong.

In late November that year, Kungsim-dong in Hoeryong witnessed a tearful meeting between Chae Hui and her mother. Afterwards, Chae cured herself of her illness and studied hard, getting admitted into the Party and elected chairwoman of the Women's Union of the Kungsim Coal Mine in the process. Her latest post was that of chairwoman of the trade union of the spinning department of the Chongjin Spinning Mill.

As her leave at the spa drew to a close, Chae Hui called on Kim Jong Suk to say farewell. "You look much better than when I first saw you here," Kim Jong Suk said. Rejoicing at her good health, Kim Jong Suk expressed her joy over Chae's

healthier condition and unpacked a paper bundle, taking out a short-sleeved blouse. She offered it to Chae, though, she said, it was made of inferior cloth due to the difficult economic conditions of the country.

Chae could not hold out her hands to take it at first, because she felt choked to see kindhearted Kim Jong Suk still wearing a simple dress, though offering a fashionable garment to her.

Smiling at her, Kim Jong Suk said, "In the future you will reel fine thread to make beautiful clothes for me, won't you?" She then put the blouse in Chae's arms, and walked a long distance with her to see her off.

Thanks to Kim Jong Suk's constant care, Chae led a successful career, attending the Second Congress of the Workers' Party as a representative of her factory and visiting foreign countries in April 1949 as a member of a Korean trade union delegation.

While showing her benevolent care for the people, Kim Jong Suk always dressed in an ordinary jacket and skirt, and lived a frugal life, doing her best to lay the foundation for building a new Korea.

For this reason, anyone who happened to meet her was always moved by her noble character and frugal life. Sometimes people failed to recognize her, among them, Kim Je Won, a farmer who had initiated the patriotic rice donation movement.

When he came a long distance bringing rice in an oxcart, to donate it to the state out of patriotism, Kim Jong Suk received him warmly, and helped him unload the heavy bags of rice. When the unloading was over, she dusted the straw from his clothes and brought warm water for him to wash with.

It never occurred to Kim Je Won that this woman who was so kind-hearted, yet simply-dressed could be Kim Jong Suk. "I've met General Kim Il Sung in Pyongyang on this occasion and so realized my lifelong desire," he said. "Yet, I regret that I have failed to see Madam Kim Jong Suk, who is known to be very

loyal to the General and so good at shooting that the Japs were terrified of her. Could you please help me to see her on this occasion?"

Looking at him kindly all the while, with a broad smile on her face, Kim Jong Suk revealed her identity.

A businessman from Sinuiju also made the same "mistake". When he came to recognize who she was at last, he said he had thought she might be dressed in silks. To him, Kim Jong Suk said that now that the people were not wearing silk clothes, she could not wear them either, and that when the policies of General Kim Il Sung were translated into reality and all the people would come to wear silk clothes, she would also wear them.

Her humanity was also extended to the foreigners in Korea, making them close friends of the Korean people.

One day in 1946, two Japanese girls, 16 years old and 19 years old, respectively, waifs who had wandered from Northeast China to Pyongyang, following the Japanese army as it retreated, happened to come to Kim Jong Suk's house to beg for food.

Kim Jong Suk ushered them in, and took good care of them. Once her son asked why she was providing them with food and shelter, though she had fought against the Japanese.

"Your father and mother fought against the Japanese imperialists," she replied, "not the Japanese workers, farmers and other working masses."

Some of the guards were suspicious of these girls from a hostile country living in the house, but Kim Jong Suk did not keep them at bay and, instead, asked them to help her cook meals or make fruit juice for Kim Il Sung.

One day, when Kim Il Sung caught influenza and was suffering from a high fever, the girls took out their emergency pills for him. Kim Jong Suk took them unhesitatingly and gave them to Kim Il Sung.

The Japanese girls had a good time, living with her like one family for several months, before returning to Japan safely. Back in Japan, they never forgot her, remembering her kind help to them in their hour of need.

In January 1971, 20 years later, they wrote a letter of thanks to Kim Il Sung, in which they also expressed their determination to make every effort for the development of Korea-Japan friendship.

Kim Jong Suk also took good care of a Japanese woman in her neighbourhood, who had married a Korean.

Kim Jong Suk encouraged the woman, who was depressed, to cheer up, and support her husband, who was devoted to building a new Korea. She also saw to it that her own son played at soldiers with the Japanese woman's children.

Decades later, when the Japanese woman is 80 years old and her children are nearing 60, they still look back upon those days with deep emotion, yearning for Kim Jong Suk.

Immediately after Korea's liberation, many foreign delegations and friends from all walks of life called on Kim Il Sung. Kim Jong Suk would let them stay at her house for several days at a time.

In summer 1948, Zhou Baozhong's wife, Wang Yizhi, and his daughter arrived in Pyongyang. Zhou Baozhong had been intimate with Kim Il Sung in the days of the anti-Japanese armed struggle. Kim Jong Suk asked them to stay at her house.

At that time, China was in the throes of a fierce war between the Communist Party and the Kuomintang, and the units of the KPRA sent by Kim Il Sung were assisting the Chinese revolution on the side of the communists.

Kim Jong Suk made Wang Yizhi and her little daughter Zhou Wei at home. After a few days, Zhou Wei romped about as freely as in her own house, and when she wanted something to eat, she asked Kim Jong Suk for it, rather than her mother. Kim Jong Suk obliged Zhou Wei with whatever she wanted, fruit juice or Chinese food, such as Chinese dumplings and noodles. She did

what she could do for them, always saying that they and her family were brothers and sisters of the same class, sharing the same table in the same house now and the same blood in the same trench in the struggle against the imperialists. Afterwards, during the Korean War, Zhou Baozhong extended his firm solidarity to the struggle of the Korean people, and in 1951 he sent even his aide and driver to the Korean front.

13. BRINGING UP HER SON AS KIM IL SUNG'S SUCCESSOR

REARING YOUNG KIM JONG IL AS THE SON OF MT. PAEKTU

Kim Il Sung once recollected Kim Jong Suk as follows: "Though she dedicated her all to the well-being of her comrades and fellows all her life, she did not leave not a single penny or any property for her son and daughter. The money she spent came out of my salary, and the house and furniture she used all belonged to the state. If there is any heritage she left with us, it is that she brought up Comrade Kim Jong Il to be the leader of the future, and presented him to the motherland and the Party. You say I

brought him up to be my successor but, in actual fact, the foundation was laid by Kim Jong Suk. This was the greatest service she rendered for the revolution."

The days when Kim Jong Suk gave birth to Kim Jong Il and brought him up were not calm and peaceful; they were quite disturbing and difficult. The gunfire of anti-Japanese war roared across bloody battlefields, and was followed by the building of a new democratic Korea setting out on an untrodden path.

On this tortuous road over thousands of miles across the flaring flames and heavy snow, Kim Jong Suk brought up her son wrapped up in her uniform smelling of gunpowder, sometimes covering him with her body for his protection from the rain of bullets, and sometimes warming his frozen body with her own.

She used to tell him that he should grow up quickly to become a filial son of his father, and work heart and soul for the country and people as expected by his father. She taught him in his childhood to respect Kim Il Sung not merely as his father but as the leader of all the Korean people, and bear in mind the intention of carrying forward his cause successfully.

Informing him that his father's name "Kim Il Sung" was bestowed on the leader by his revolutionary comrades to reflect the unanimous desire of the Korean people, she told her son that the name has the deep meaning that his father should be the sun to dispel the darkness hanging over the land of Korea and provide eternal happiness for the Korean people. She explained in plain words that the moon, as well as millions of twinkling stars in the sky, shines with reflected sunlight, and taught him that the sun is the one and only source of light in the world. She added that, as his father is the sun of the country and people, she and her son, as well as the entire people should conduct themselves before him as his soldiers.

On the day after visiting Kim Il Sung's native home in Mangyongdae for the first time after their triumphant return to the

homeland, she said to her son: "All the family members of your father in Mangyongdae unyieldingly fought against the enemy for their country and people. Now it's your turn. You should grow up quickly to take over the revolutionary cause of your father and turn the liberated country into the best land in the world. That is precisely the way in which you will carry on the lineage of the Mangyongdae Family."

She took her son not only to Mangyongdae but also to Chilgol and Ponghwa-ri, which are associated with the activities of the Mangyongdae Family members.

Atop Mangyong Hill, she related to her son the poem, *The Green Pine Tree on Nam Hill*[42] composed by his grandfather Kim Hyong Jik, and at the Maekjon Ferry, she told him that his father at a tender age had assisted his grandfather in the latter's revolutionary work, true to the latter's intention.

Her story about the underlying principle of his father's revolutionary family--oppose the foreign aggressors and devote one's all for the country and people generation after generation--left a deep, indelible memory in the mind of young Kim Jong Il.

One day, when she was making preparations for her visit, together with her son, to Mangyongdae, Kim Jong Il asked where his birthplace was. His question reminded her there and then of the secret camp deep in the forests of Mt. Paektu, the humble log-cabin near the Sobaek Stream, the missions that had compelled her to leave for the enemy-held areas, placing her less-than-a-year-old son under the care of her comrades-in-arms, and her emotional reunions with her lovely son, rubbing her cheek against his, at the outpost to which her comrades-in-arms had brought him upon her return from her missions. She said to him, "Your birthplace is Mt. Paektu, the highest mountain in Korea. Mt. Paektu, with Lake Chon on its top and deep forests around it, is where your father defeated the Japs."

She continued to say that Mt. Paektu is permeated with the revolutionary spirit of bracing up in the face of any ordeal and fighting for final victory.

Listening to such stories frequently, Kim Jong Il came to entertain pride in and respect for his father, who had defeated the Japanese aggressors in the wide area around Mt. Paektu.

Kim Jong Suk also took her son with her each time she accompanied Kim Il Sung on field guidance to many places, in order to let him learn from the noble virtues of his father, who devoted himself heart and soul to the interests of the people.

Throughout the whole course of accompanying Kim Il Sung on his on-the-spot guidance to factories and rural or fishing villages, Kim Jong Suk taught her son to witness the thrilling reality of the country burning with the creative enthusiasm and patriotic ardour of its workers and farmers, and to appreciate the painstaking efforts of his father made for the interests of the people and exhorted him to treasure and love them and work devotedly for them, as his father was doing.

While accompanying Kim Il Sung on field guidance on snowy or rainy days, Kim Jong Il came to know the truth that revolution is aimed at providing the people with the greatest happiness and that the revolution geared to realizing the independence of mankind is a reflection of the utmost love for them.

He also came to be convinced that Kim Il Sung was a great man, endowed with genuine love for the people.

Kim Jong Suk set a good example through her own actions as part of the education of her son to remain loyal to his father.

She used to accompany Kim Il Sung early in the morning as far as the gate to see him off, and meet him also there in the evening, no matter how late it might be. Seeing her do this every day, her son emulated her, waiting with her at the gate for his father's arrival, and greeting him with delight. One stormy night, her son awoke to see his mother entering the bedroom. Holding her cold

hands in his warm ones, he asked her where she had been. With a subdued smile on her face, she replied that she had been out to look around the house because of the inclement weather. As this occurrence was repeated night after night, however, his wonder grew and grew, prompting more questions. To his persistent inquiries, his mother affectionately stroked his head, and said, "I am your father's guard."

The following day, as it was high time for his father's return, the son went out to the sentry-box of the house, and stood guard with a wooden rifle in hand.

Kim Jong Suk used to walk on tiptoe each time she had to pass the room where Kim Il Sung was working. Taking his cue from her, her son, too, though striding in and out of his own room, would tiptoe past his father's room.

She worked out a daily schedule for her son, with a schedule the same as that of his father, so that he would follow the same course of daily life as his father was doing solely for the victory of the revolution and the freedom and happiness of the people. Kim Jong Il observed the schedule without fail. Early in the morning, Kim Il Sung would take his son by the hand on a stroll round the garden, telling him many instructive stories. The father's stories gradually extended the range of subjects, starting from nature and society to the Korean revolution and the world revolution, and spreading to the stories of persons distinguished in ancient and modern history, and to the economy and military affairs.

In those days, Kim Jong Il acquired the qualities and virtues which befit a leader, and developed them.

One day, an official who had seen Kim Jong Il observe his daily schedule strictly told Kim Jong Suk in an anxious tone that he thought that her son, still young and growing, must be fatigued following his father's schedule.

Kim Jong Suk said that a person's habits are formed at a tender age, and that her son should be accustomed to Kim Il Sung's routine because his mission was to succeed to the latter's cause eventually.

Kim Il Sung used to stay late at his office, and come home at midnight or sometimes nearly at dawn. In order to help her son develop the habit of waiting for his father until his return, she first told him some fairy tales and other interesting stories of the olden times, or attracted his attention with riddles or guesswork, and then gradually moved on to reviewing his daily life and educating him.

Kim Jong Suk guided her son to inherit her noble revolutionary outlook on life that regarded it as her greatest joy and lifelong creed to give Kim Il Sung pleasure.

She would sit at her desk until past midnight, reading Kim Il Sung's works, and on trips by car or train, she would peruse his newly-delivered speeches carried in the newspapers. Her practical examples and uninterrupted revolutionary education greatly influenced her son to establish a serious attitude to studying.

Her special efforts were directed at fostering her son's extraordinary ability of thinking and observation, his outstanding power of inquiry, his resolute and audacious temperament, and his open-hearted, generous, and free and easy character.

She never remained indifferent to or neglected any questions raised by her son about various natural phenomena; instead, she did her best to develop his powers of observation of the complicated phenomena of nature and society, and persuasively explained to him the principles of things and phenomena.

In order to develop his thinking ability, she explained complicated natural or social phenomena one by one in an easy way--what the earth looks like and why it rotates, why there are days and nights and what causes the changes of the seasons, why

it snows, rains and blows, why the river flows and why it flows down to the sea, why a balloon goes up while a stone falls to the ground, when human society emerged and how it has developed, how the landlords and capitalists exploit workers and peasants, why the workers and peasants should become the masters of the factories and the land, and why the US aggressors occupied the southern part of Korea.

Meanwhile, her efforts to inspire love and a talent for music in her son were so great that an anti-Japanese revolutionary fighter went so far as to ask her if she was intending to bring up her son to be a musician.

Her intensive education and edification of her son, as mentioned above, served as a basis on which the young Kim Jong Il could grow up as a master of all fields, ranging from science and technology within the reach of human intelligence, to art and literature. Kim Jong Suk's ambition to rear her son as best as intended by Kim Il Sung was unbounded.

She occasionally explained to her son, in easy terms, about his father's far-reaching plan for the building of a new country in order to make him take great interest in his father's work and consider everything in an ambitious way, with the whole country as the focus of his contemplation.

She did her best to widen the visional scope of her son, making him have Mt. Paektu, the highest and most imposing in Korea, in mind when thinking of a mountain and, when asked to imagine something wide and great, envision the boundless oceans, not rivers or lakes.

One November day in 1989, Kim Il Sung said that each time he saw Mt. Paektu, it reminded him of Kim Jong Il, that Kim Jong Il is a son of Mt. Paektu and that Mt. Paektu is Kim Jong Il's birthplace and a cradle that helped him foster his courage. "In view of his ideology and character, hobbies and habit," he continued, "Kim Jong Il resembles Mt. Paektu in a literal sense.

His soul and body are quite the embodiment of the soul and spirit of Mt. Paektu. He is really a man of the Mt. Paektu type."

Kim Jong Il's traits as reflections of the spirit of Mt. Paektu owe their formation and development to the efforts of Kim Jong Suk.

One day during the anti-Japanese armed struggle, Kim Jong Suk was returning accompanied by her comrades-in-arms after stern military training, when she saw her son climbing a big rock with painstaking efforts. To her companions, she said that he seemed to be ascending the rock to have a bird's-eye view of the wide expanse of the forest below from there. When they were about to help her son, she dissuaded them, saying that he was doing his best to make it by himself, and they had better let him do it himself as the rock probably wouldn't be a big challenge to him.

Kim Jong Suk discovered in her young son's pluck and stubbornness the incipient formation of his indomitable spirit and unrivaled courage, and helped him think and act in an audacious and ambitious way all the time and carry out what he decided to do. She also taught him never to tolerate anything contrary to principles or morality, so as to bring him up as a man of principles and righteousness.

Even in snowy and windy winters Kim Jong Suk did not allow her son to wear thick clothes. "Your father used to wear unlined clothes in the coldest winters during the anti-Japanese guerrilla war," she told her son. "Yet, he never felt cold. On the contrary, he would perspire after a battle or a long march. You'd better play snowball games outside than put on thick clothes in the cold season."

In this way, Kim Jong Il trained his iron will and courage, and his body. One summer day in 1946, he saw a horse tied up in front of the house and asked a guard to help him ride it. The guard seated him on the saddle and walked along with it, holding the

reins. After a while, however, Kim Jong Il asked him to hand over the reins to him. The guard could not agree because the rider was only four years old and the horse, though pliable, might suddenly gallop or bounce along all of a sudden, causing an unexpected accident to the rider. All things considered, the guard could not bring himself to agree to Kim Jong Il's request.

Later, the guard told Kim Jong Suk of that day's incident. "How daring and general-like he is to try to ride a horse alone at such a young age," she remarked, and said she would train him well in horse-riding so that she could show his admirable skill to his father.

Treasuring her son's demand and hope, however excessive, seemingly extraordinary or even unrealizable it might be, she did her best to satisfy his request. She set about training him in horse-riding.

She readjusted the saddle and the stirrup iron for her son's convenience, and drew his attention to key points in riding. Saying that a horse was able to sense its rider's feeling towards it, she taught him to make friends with it, giving it an occasional gentle stroke and feeding it on what it liked best.

A year later, a white horse was brought from a racecourse. Kim Jong Il was about to mount the horse, when his great-grandmother Ri Po Ik who was in the yard blocked his way for fear of any accident.

Kim Il Sung and Kim Jong Suk mollified their grandmother with soothing smiles, and helped their son into the saddle. The latter held fast to the reins. At first, the white horse bounced up and down for a little while, and then began to step forward obediently. Remaining unperturbed all the while, Kim Jong Il guided the horse along with the reins firm in his hands.

Ri Po Ik and other relatives who witnessed the scene that day uttered a series of exclamations at his admirable and daring manner.

One September day in 1947, Kim Jong Suk, who had been staying in the Kyongsong area in North Hamgyong Province, met Kim Il Sung on field guidance to the province, and showed him their son's horse-riding skills.

The horse, with Kim Jong Il on its back, galloped along a broad road for a while, when an oxcart suddenly loomed up in the middle of the road. Kim Jong Il abruptly reined in the horse. The horse, its front legs making desperate movements in mid-air made a burbling sound, while the rider remained calm in the saddle. Kim Il Sung, who was riding after him, saw the scene, and laughed aloud.

Kim Jong Suk also taught her son marksmanship.

She initiated him into the postures for shooting by making use of trees or rocks, as well as the knack of aiming at a flying bird and a swimming fish.

She also taught him the method of adjusting his aiming eye through the gunsight at the target, and demonstrated the process for him.

The training continued.

Once, when accompanying Kim Il Sung on field guidance, Kim Jong Suk showed him their son's marksmanship. The target was a sheet of paper hanging on a branch of a poplar. Kim Jong Il took a pistol which his father had loaded, and posed himself for firing in a self-confident way.

Kim Jong Suk corrected his posture, and then said he should shoot with his mind, not with his finger.

After a while, three shots rang out, all of them hitting the target.

Kim Il Sung hugged his son tightly, speaking highly of his skills, and urged him to learn to shoot riding on horseback in the future.

Kim Jong Suk also did her best to implant the precious virtue of comradeship in the mind of her son.

One day a bicycle-race took place at the kindergarten Kim Jong Il was attending. That day, Kim Jong Il, who had been active in regular physical training sessions, took the lead from the start. When the race was in full swing, however, a pursuing child fell from his bicycle. Kim Jong Il halted his own bike, and rushed to help the other child up. As a result, Kim Jong Il took the second place that day. After the race, Kim Jong Suk held him in her arms, and praised him, saying, "Well done! You helped your comrade up from his fall. Such a deed is far more commendable than the first place you could have taken."

Often telling her son that one's devotion to others' interests makes one a great person, she took care to bring up her son to be a communist fighter with a high sense of noble human love and deep obligation, revolutionary principles and righteousness.

Soon after Korea's liberation, Kim Il Sung's house was frequented by bereaved family members of Ma Tong Hui, Ryu Yong Chan and other anti-Japanese fighters, as well as revolutionary comrades-in-arms, who would stay there for several days or even months. To her inquisitive son she said, "Love and obligation are part and parcel of man's life; he cannot live alone, separated from other people. He should love others, repaying the love he enjoys from others. If one only demands love from others but repays nothing for it, one will be held in contempt as an unfaithful person."

One night, when she was summing up the daily routine of her son, Kim Jong Suk commended him for having spent the day together with his playmates in a friendly manner, and stressed that if he trusted and loved everyone but an enemy, he would be respected and followed by others all the time.

She explained, in plain terms, that he should lead all the people forward with love for and trust in them, to make them his revolutionary comrades.

Kim Jong Suk brought up her son in a simple and frugal way. She often told him that the Korean people followed his father looking up to him, not only because he was a great man but because he was so modest and simple in his life, allowing no gap between him and the people. She taught that their family should be equal in life with the people as his father wished. Kim Il Sung and Kim Jong Suk continued personal tours of guidance to factories, and farming and fishing villages, including cornstarch factories and silk mills, to make the people better-off, but they used a dress hanger for a wardrobe and lived in a simple room furnished with a desk and a small bed.

One day, Kim Jong Suk was making a summer suit for her son.

A woman who was helping her found that Kim Jong Suk was using cloth from an old parachute, and told her that they should use better cloth. Parachute cloth was not suitable for a summer suit because it was air-proof material and could hardly absorb sweat. Kim Jong Suk replied that few families at that time could dress their children properly, so she had to dress her son in a plain suit, just like other children. A short-sleeved shirt made of white parachute cloth and black trousers were the new summer suit prepared for her son by Kim Jong Suk.

In winter, too Kim Jong Suk made the same plain clothes for her son as other children wore. One day, Kim Jong Il called at the Guards unit wearing socks darned by his mother. The young Guards were surprised at the sight, and exclaimed, "The son of the General wears darned socks!"

Having heard the story from her son, Kim Jong Suk said, "Their surprise arose from a misconception. It is not a shame to

have darned socks on. When I was young, my parents couldn't afford even a patch of cloth to wrap my feet with in cold winter, not to speak of socks. And during the guerrilla struggle when my shoes wore out I bound them with string to climb the mountains. Though the country is liberated, people are still not well-off. You see more children wearing worn-out socks than new ones. You should not consider yourself a special being just because you are the son of the General. As others eat millet, we must eat millet, and as others wear darned socks, we must do the same."

She added that it would be more shameful to wear new clothes and socks when others wore old, patched ones.

Kim Jong Suk accustomed her son to live on frugal meals. In the autumn of 1947, when she was staying in Kyongsong County, North Hamgyong Province, she cooked rice mixed with foxtail millet for her son.

Knowing this, a woman official was very impatient. Reading her mind, Kim Jong Suk told her that during the guerrilla struggle the General always shared meals with the other guerrillas, enjoying gruel and maize as they did, and after liberation he would willingly live on rice mixed with other cereals, saying that he could not eat white rice when the people couldn't eat it. Only when other cereals were served on the table, she said, was the General satisfied.

The woman official urged her to serve her son alone with white rice, but Kim Jong Suk refused, with a smile, saying that a man should get accustomed to living the same as others from his childhood.

Once an escort, too, persuaded her to give her son snacks of good quality. She again refused, saying that the General was worrying too much because sweets and biscuits were not supplied enough to children, so her son could not enjoy such a privilege even though he was the son of the General. She added that such a privilege was not the General's will, and she herself could not

allow it. She told her son that the Japanese imperialists destroyed cornstarch factories when they fled, so that the country was not producing enough sweets and biscuits for the children of workers and farmers.

Wi Chang Suk, who often stayed in Kim Jong Suk's house in those days, recollected as follows:

"Whenever I see all the children in our country eating bread stuffed with red beans for everyday snacks in the nurseries and kindergartens and receiving on holidays armfuls of snacks, including biscuits and caramels as presents, I remember what Kim Jong Suk said in those days and the appearance of young Kim Jong Il who had only boiled potatoes as snacks."

Kim Jong Suk educated her son to grow up into a true man by inheriting the communist virtues of his father intact.

When she was ironing one evening, her son asked her why his father and mother acknowledged the guard on duty when they passed him, while others did not. She replied that it was an expression of thanks to them, for the guards always took much trouble over the safety of his father. Saying that good manners showed one's dignity and personality she taught him how to observe the proprieties.

Grandmother Ri Po Ik once came from Mangyongdae, and stayed at the Kim Il Sung's house for a few days.

Kim Jong Il would get up early in the morning and go to his great-grandmother to say good morning. In the evening he would take a bowl of water to her room for her to drink at night, and say goodnight before going to bed. Whenever he went out to play, he would inform her.

His great-grandmother was very impressed by his politeness.

Kim Jong Suk also cultivated her son's character so that he respected the people and gave them no trouble.

When Kim Jong Suk was staying in Kyongsong County, some women of that county who came to see her left quilts to serve as her bedding, despite her repeated refusals.

After saying goodbye to them she appreciated the women's sincerity and said that it would be reasonable to return the quilts when leaving the county without using them, because they would not be easy to wash after use. She persuaded her son to use only the blanket she had brought from their own house.

When the officials asked her to allow them to give a quilt to only her son, Kim Jong Suk said that Kim Il Sung avoided any behavior which would inconvenience the people, so it would be unreasonable to sleep under their precious quilts on the excuse of their sincerity.

Kim Jong Il said that the blanket was better for him, and that, just like his father, he would do nothing to bother the people. Patting him on the shoulder, Kim Jong Suk said, "I am proud of you. You must live always following your father's will."

Always learning his mother's popular traits. Kim Jong Il never considered himself better than others. Even in his kindergarten and primary school days, he would wear cotton socks and rubber or canvas shoes. He would be dressed in ordinary clothes, the same as the other children.

One summer day, when he was studying at middle school, a classmate saw Kim Jong Il cleaning his rubber shoes with running water, and asked why he did not choose sneakers and other fine shoes instead of the rubber shoes, which were wet with sweat.

In his senior middle school and university days, too, he dressed in school uniform and working dress when he took part in social labour, carried a shoulder pole, dug in the mire and lived under the same discipline as his classmates did.

All such virtues were cultivated under the care of Kim Jong Suk.

Seeing Kim Jong Il growing up leading such a frugal and diligent life, a neighbour once told Kim Jong Suk that her discipline seemed to be too strict. Kim Jong Suk replied, "My son was born on Mt. Paektu. He grew up, wrapped in my military uniform and being carried on my knapsack during the march. He learned to walk with my rifle in his hand, and lived on the wild vegetables and water of Mt. Paektu. I was determined to bring up my son to be worthy of a son of Mt. Paektu."

Indeed, Kim Jong Suk was a mother who raised her son to be a great revolutionary, a son of the homeland and the people who would carry forward the revolutionary cause of Juche pioneered by Kim Il Sung, looking far ahead to the future of the country and revolution.

* * *

In liberated Korea, the Workers' Party of Korea was founded, and was leading the people to build a new homeland. The DPRK, which was the first independent and sovereign state in Korea, was founded, and the revolutionary armed forces which inherited the traditions of the anti-Japanese revolution were growing into a strong army.

In addition, the material life of the people improved considerably through the successful implementation of two national economic plans.

On September 21, 1949, Kim Il Sung set out on the road of on-the-spot guidance to meet the people of Thosan County, who had turned out for the building of a new Korea. That day, Kim Jong Suk sent him off at the front gate as usual. Her manner and parting words were as in ordinary times, but her health was in a critical condition. She never showed a sign of illness, however, and said farewell to him with a bright smile.

Kim Jong Suk stayed long at the gate with her son, looking far into the direction in which Kim Il Sung's car disappeared. She never thought that this might be her last farewell to Kim Il Sung.

Afterward, she saw her son off to the kindergarten, and went back into the house. She endured the pain she felt to finish a woolen jacket she had been knitting for Kim Il Sung. When it was nearly dark, her condition grew worse.

An official proposed that she go to a hospital, but she refused. She did not want to leave the house before Kim Il Sung returned.

The aide wanted to make a long-distance call to inform Kim Il Sung of her critical condition, but she persuaded him not to do so, telling him that they must not disturb the General's work.

When she was breathing with difficulty and slipping into unconsciousness, being dimmed, the aide could not stand it any longer, and picked up the handset to call Kim Il Sung.

At 11:40 pm when Kim Il Sung arrived home, Kim Jong Suk had already lost consciousness. In this condition she was moved to a hospital.

At dawn on September 22, 1949, Kim Jong Suk passed away, a heroine of the anti-Japanese revolution and an indomitable revolutionary fighter who had devoted herself to the country and the people, and ardently loved her comrades and the nation.

Newspapers and radio stations published a notice of her death. At this unexpected sad news, the whole country was in tears of grief.

From the morning of September 22, a lot of people acted in waves to express their condolences.

Kim Il Sung looked long at Kim Jong Suk, who lay in silence, enveloped with flowers, and said as follows:

"Kim Jong Suk was an ardent revolutionary who devoted her all for the liberation of the country and the victory of our revolution. She was a crack shot and an experienced underground operative, as well as an iron-willed communist who was never

daunted by any trials or difficulties no matter how severe. She lost her parents and brothers in her childhood, and was forced to part with her relatives. She grew up going through all sorts of hardships. She loved the country and her comrades dearly, and devoted her all for the interests of the revolution. Whatever she did was for her comrades, not for herself."

In the afternoon of September 24, the senior officials of the Party and the government carried her coffin for the funeral ceremony.

Kim Jong Suk lived only four years in the liberated homeland, which she had longed for during the bloody struggle of the anti-Japanese revolution. Her death was a great blow to all Koreans, for she ended her life at the young age of 32.

But she rendered distinguished services to the country and the nation in such a short lifetime.

Kim Jong Suk's life was the honourable life of a guard soldier. She devoted herself to Kim Il Sung. Throughout her life, she rendered distinguished services in the struggle for the liberation of the country and for the freedom and happiness of the people. In addition, hers was a life which brought up Kim Jong Il to be the leader of the Korean revolution, and prepared the next generation of the revolutionary cause of Juche.

Her achievements will remain forever in the hearts of the Korean people century after century.

NOTE

1. **Juche 6**-In Korea, the Juche era, beginning in 1912, the year Kim Il Sung was born, has been instituted, in order to shed glory on the revolutionary life and achievements of Kim Il Sung, who authored the Juche idea and led the

Korean revolution and construction to victory. The Juche era was established on July 8, 1997, the third anniversary of the death of President Kim Il Sung.

2. **Rim Chun Chu** (March 8, 1912-April 27, 1988)-Participated in the revolutionary struggle in its early years. He was thrown into Sodaemun Prison in Seoul in connection with an anti-Japanese students incident. After joining the KPRA, he worked at important posts as a member of the Party committee of the KPRA and the secretary of the Eastern Manchurian Party Working Committee. After Korea's liberation, he held the posts of provincial Party chairman, Secretary General of the Presidium of the Supreme People's Assembly and Vice-President of the DPRK.

3. **Revolutionary Mutual Aid Society**-An anti-Japanese mass body organized by Kim Il Sung in the days of the anti-Japanese revolutionary struggle. The society involved those people who showed goodwill towards anti-Japanese revolutionaries or kept their neutrality, sympathizers and old people. The society made great contribution to building a firm mass foundation for the anti-Japanese armed struggle.

4. **"Spring uprising"**-A large-scale and organized uprising waged by peasants in Jiandao, China, under the leadership of Kim Il Sung against the Japanese imperialists and reactionary landlords in the spring of 1932. The uprising provided favourable conditions for pushing ahead with the work of founding the anti-Japanese guerrilla army, building guerrilla bases and laying a mass foundation for armed struggle.

5. **Self-Defence Corps**-An armed organization the Japanese imperialists formed in the villages in Northeast China from 1932, by conscripting young and middle-aged people under the pretext of maintaining "public peace in local areas by their own efforts." The corps was an auxiliary force of the Japanese aggressive army and police force for "punishing" the anti-Japanese guerrilla army and striking at the revolutionary forces.

6. *The Maypole*-A revolutionary song and dance performance created by Kim Il Sung in the early days of his revolutionary activities. The work stresses that if the whole nation rises for battle, united firmly with one mind and will, the people will achieve the independence of the country.

7. **.Puppet Manchukuo army**-An army formed by the Japanese imperialists after rigging up the puppet state of "Manchukuo" on March 1, 1932, following their occupation of Manchuria. This army disappeared when imperialist Japan was defeated, and "Manchukuo" collapsed in 1945.
8. . **Semi-guerrilla zone**-A form of guerrilla base built in the days of the anti-Japanese armed struggle. It was outwardly an enemy-controlled area; however, it was, in fact, under the jurisdiction of the KPRA, supporting the People's Revolutionary Army and fostering reserves for the revolutionary forces. It also played the role of an intermediary liaison place.

9. **"Minsaengdan"**-A counterrevolutionary spy organization formed by the Japanese imperialist aggressors

in February 1932 in Jiandao. The "Minsaengdan," under the manipulation of the Japanese imperialists, put up the deceptive slogans of "maintaining the right to live as a nation" and "autonomy for the Koreans in Jiandao." Pretending to be working in the interests of the Korean nation, this organization attempted to paralyze the Korean people's anti-Japanese consciousness, to harm the Korean communists and to set Koreans against Chinese, with the aim of disrupting the revolutionary ranks from within. However, its counterrevolutionary colours were laid bare before long, and it was dissolved in July 1932. The Japanese imperialists then made their agents and stooges resort to every conceivable plot and scheme to make it look as if many "Minsaengdan" agents had infiltrated the revolutionary ranks. The anti-"Minsaengdan" struggle was conducted in an ultra-Leftist way because of the political stupidity and dishonest political ambitions of national chauvinists and factionalist flunkeys who had been deceived by the Japanese imperialists' subterfuge, causing great damage to the unity and cohesion of the revolutionary ranks and the development of the Korean revolution. The Leftist deviation of the anti-"Minsaengdan" struggle was overcome only by the efforts of Kim Il Sung.

10. **Showa 10**-Showa was the era beginning in 1926, the year when Hirohito was placed on the imperial throne of Japan. Showa 10 refers to 1935.

11. **Manchukuo**-A puppet state the Japanese imperialists rigged up on March 1, 1932, placing the last Qing Emperor Pu Yi on the throne, after they occupied Northeast China.

12. **Choe Hyon** (June 8, 1907-April 9, 1982)-Anti-Japanese fighter. He was arrested and put in prison for seven years. After he was released from prison in July 1932, he joined the KPRA and became a commander. He served as a corps commander during the Fatherland Liberation War, Minister of the People's Armed Forces after the war and in various other important posts of the Party and the state.

13. **Pak Tal** (December 28, 1910-April 1, 1960)-The chief of the Korean National Liberation Union. He was betrayed to the Japanese police in September 1938. In August 1945, following the liberation of the country, he was released from Sodaemun Prison in Seoul, semi-paralysed. Later, bedridden in Pyongyang, and engaged in writing.

14. **"Hyesan incident"**-Two rounds of wholesale arrests of Korean revolutionaries and patriotic people carried out by the Japanese imperialists in 1937 and 1938, respectively, in Korea, with Hyesan as the centre, and in the Changbai area, Northeast China. In August 1941, the Japanese imperialists convicted 167 patriots at the Hamhung District Court alone in the name of the "Hyesan incident," sentencing many of them to death or penal servitude for life.

15. **"Concord Society"**-A reactionary organization of the puppet "Manchukuo" regime rigged up by the Japanese imperialists on July 25, 1932. The "Concord Society" served as an independent corps and reactionary base for supporting the Japanese imperialists' aggressive policy, to "punish" the anti-Japanese armed forces in Manchuria and imbue the people with reactionary ideology, according to the plan of the Kwantung Army to "clear up and maintain

public peace." The society was dissolved when imperialist Japan was defeated and "Manchukuo" collapsed.

16. **Surinal festival**-The fifth day of the fifth lunar month, a traditional holiday in Korea between the spring sowing and the weeding seasons. On the day the Korean people relax and express their hope for a good harvest, and hold a variety of games, including wrestling, playing on swings and archery.

17. **Kabo Peasant War**-A peasant uprising against the feudal rulers of Korea and the Japanese aggressors. The war broke out in 1894-1895 in Jolla Province, in the southwestern region of the Korean peninsula. Kabo refers to the year 1894.

18. **Righteous Volunteers struggle**-A struggle which patriotic people waged against foreign aggressors. The struggle became more intense in 1895-1896, when the aggression of Japan became undisguised. In particular, the anti-Japanese volunteers fought for ten years, from 1904 to 1914, before and after the Japanese occupation of Korea, delivering heavy blows at the Japanese imperialist aggressors in Korea and abroad.

19. **March First Popular Uprising**-The Korean people's nationwide anti-Japanese patriotic struggle which broke out on March 1, 1919, against the brutal colonial rule of Japanese imperialism. It is also called the March First Movement. Starting from a mass demonstration, with shouts of "Long live the independence of Korea," the demonstrators attacked and destroyed the Japanese imperialist ruling machinery and punished the aggressors

and traitors to the nation. The uprising spread to the Korean compatriots living in Northeast China, Shanghai, the Maritime Territory of Russia, Japan and Hawaii.

20. **Singan Association**-A united front organization formed in Seoul in February 1927 as a coalition of communists and nationalists. The Singan Association's programme was to consolidate the solidarity of the whole nation, aiming to achieve the independence of Korea. But, due to the subversive activities of Japanese imperialism, reformist manoeuvring within the organization and the lack of a pivotal leading force capable of leading the organization skillfully, the association disintegrated in May 1931.

21. **Chapter of Chondoism**-An institution of the Chondoist religion (a native religion of Korea). There was the central chapter as well as local ones.

22. **Friendship associations**-Meetings or groups formed to promote mutual friendship and harmony. The political workers dispatched to the homeland during the anti-Japanese armed struggle made legal use of these associations for bringing the broad masses of the people into the revolutionary ranks.

23. **Expedition to Rehe**-An expedition made around the outbreak of the Sino-Japanese War. The Leftist adventurists in the Comintern forced anti-Japanese armed units operating in Northeast China to encircle and attack Changchun, capital of "Manchukuo," and to advance towards Rehe. It was a reckless and unfeasible military operation, and ended in failure, causing heavy losses.

24. **Hangawi Day**-The 15th day of the eighth lunar month, a traditional autumn holiday which the Korean nation has celebrated from olden times. On this day, memorial services are held before the tombs of ancestors. With the approach of the harvest, the people celebrate their successful work during the year with a variety of festive activities.

25. **May 30 Uprising**-A Leftist adventure which factionalists organized in eastern Manchuria in May 1930. This uprising gave the Japanese imperialists and Kuomintang warlords an excuse for oppressing communists and other anti-Japanese elements. The uprising ended in failure, resulting in great sacrifices.

26. **"Art of shrinking distances"**-A legendary term for the art by which to move hundreds of miles in a few steps with preternatural swiftness. During the anti-Japanese revolutionary struggle, the Korean people praised the outstanding commanding art and tactics of Kim Il Sung by comparing them with the art of shortening distance.

27. **"Special clean-up campaign for maintaining public peace in the southeastern areas"**-A large-scale "punitive" operation that the Japanese imperialists conducted against the KPRA by establishing the "punitive command" in Jilin, China, in September 1939; alias "punitive" operations in the three provinces of Tonghua, Jilin and Jiandao or "punitive" operations in the three provinces of Manchuria. The Japanese imperialists mobilized 200,000 troops for this task.

28. **"Greater East Asia Co-prosperity Sphere"**-An aggressive wild dream for gaining a "sphere of influence" of monopolistic colonialism put forward by the Japanese imperialists in the 1940s. The "Greater East Asia Co-prosperity Sphere" originated from the belated entry of Japanese imperialism into capitalism. It was supposed to be a "new order" in which Asian countries co-prospered under the supremacy of Japan in the Pacific region after Japan had driven out the Western capitalist forces from Asia. It was a scheme for dominating not only Asia but the whole world. In order to put into practice this aggressive slogan, Japanese imperialism initiated the Pacific War and met its doom; however this old dream still lingers in the thoughts of some Japanese reactionaries.

29. **An Kil** (February 24, 1907-December 13, 1947)-After joining the KPRA led by Kim Il Sung in 1933, he worked as a regimental commander and the chief of staff of the Third Directional Force. After Korea's liberation in August 1945, he worked at important posts in the Party and the government, and made energetic efforts to implement the three major tasks of building the party, the state and the army.

30. **O Jin U** (March 8, 1917-February 25, 1995)-Anti-Japanese veteran revolutionary. He served at important posts in the Party and the state-division commander and chief of staff of a corps of the KPA during the Fatherland Liberation War, and after the war the Minister of the People's Armed Forces and a member of the Presidium of the Political Bureau of the Central Committee of the Workers' Party of Korea. He was awarded the title of Marshal of the Korean People's Army in 1992.

31. **Kim Chaek** (August 14, 1903-January 31, 1951)-Joined the revolution in 1927. He was arrested by the Japanese police and jailed several times. After enlistment in the KPRA in 1932, he served as a commander. After Korea's liberation, he worked as the Vice-Chairman of the North Korean People's Committee, Vice-Premier of the Cabinet and Minister of Industry of the DPRK. During the Fatherland Liberation War he was a member of the Military Commission and the front commander.

32. **The three southern regions**-The three southern regions of Korea-North and South Chungchong provinces, North and South Jolla provinces and North and South Kyongsang provinces.

33. **Kang Ryang Uk** (December 7, 1904-January 9, 1983)-Patriotic fighter and political activist. During the Japanese occupation of Korea, he was a teacher and minister of religion, engaging in patriotic activities. He served as Secretary General of the Presidium of the Supreme People's Assembly, Chairman of the Korean Social Democratic Party and Vice-President of the DPRK.

34. **Jo Man Sik**-Taking a leadership post in the Korean Democratic Party founded in Pyongyang after Korea's liberation, he schemed to turn the party into a puppet of the US military government that the United States had established in Seoul. He attempted to frustrate the people's struggle for democratic and social development in north Korea and for the establishment of an independent and sovereign state of the whole of Korea, and to split the democratic forces of Korea. Jo Man Sik and his henchmen were expelled from the party in February 1946.

35. **General ideological mobilization movement for nation building**-An ideological transformation movement for getting rid of all kinds of obsolete ideas and conventions left over by Japanese imperialism in liberated Korea, arming the people with a new idea of nation building and establishing animated and vibrant national traits. Kim Il Sung put forward the policy of conducting this movement at the Third Enlarged Meeting of the North Korean Provisional People's Committee on November 25, 1946.

36. **"Seven evils"**-Seven grounds for turning wives out of doors in feudal-Confucian morality (haughtiness to the husband's parents, sterility, debauchery, contraction of a serious disease, jealousy, trouble making and theft), a feudal ethic aimed at reducing wives to complete subordination to their husbands in the patriarchal family.

37. "**Three principles of obedience"**-Three moral precepts that women had to follow in feudal-Confucian morality-obeying their fathers before marriage, their husbands after marriage and their sons after their husbands died. This was one of the reactionary moral standards ignoring women's rights and restricting them in feudal fetters.

38. **Mountain Shrine**-A revolutionary drama Kim Il Sung created and put on stage at Jiajiatun, China, in the days of his early revolutionary activity. The work lays bare the falsehood and deceitfulness of superstition, and the reactionary natures of landlords and stooges of the Japanese imperialists, and gives an artistic presentation of the idea that if they are to be better off, the working people

must have faith not in superstition but in their own strength.

39. **Ryo Un Hyong** (April 22, 1886-July 19, 1947)-A Korean independence campaigner from Yangphyong, Kyonggi Province. He took part in the "Korean Provisional Government in Shanghai" and the Koryo Communist Party in his early days, fighting for Korea's independence. In Seoul, he worked as general director of the newspaper Joson Jungang Ilbo, chairman of the Nation-Building Union of Korea and head of the Korean People's Party. After the liberation of the country, he advocated an independent political line and national reunification in alliance with the communists. He was assassinated by the enemy.

40. **"Korean Provisional Government in Shanghai"**-The "Provisional Government of the Republic of Korea" organized in April 1919 by 29 nationalists in exile in Shanghai, China. This provisional government had no mass or political foundations, and was merely an isolated group of refugees. The key figures of this "government" were ceaselessly engaged in factional strife and the reconstruction of the cabinet; they curried favour with the US and other imperialist powers, conducting the "petition movement" for achieving Korea's independence. They collected a large amount of money from Korean compatriots in the name of the "movement fund" and squandered it on their corrupt and degenerated life-styles. They waged terrorism against communists and hindered the anti-Japanese armed struggle of the Korean people. This "government" disappeared with the end of the Pacific War in August 1945.

41. **"May 10 separate elections"**-Separate elections the US imperialists conducted in south Korea on May 10, 1948, in order to block the independent reunification of Korea and turn south Korea into their colony. The election resulted in the rise to power of the traitorous Syngman Rhee puppet regime.

42. **The Green Pine Tree on Nam Hill**-A revolutionary song written by Kim Hyong Jik, an outstanding leader of the anti-Japanese national liberation movement of Korea, when he left his native Mangyongdae in the autumn of 1918, with an aspiration for national liberation. The song is permeated with his indomitable revolutionary spirit, anti-Japanese patriotic feelings and lofty will for national liberation.

The Green Pine Tree on Nam Hill

Comrades, do you know
The green pine on Nam Hill?
The rigours of snow and frost
May strike,
But life returns
With warm sunshine
When spring comes round.

My life will have been worthless
If I fail to bring about
The country's independence.
Believe me, brothers,
I will not yield
On the road to restoration,
Even if I am torn to pieces.

If I fail,
My sons will go on fighting.
When the spring of liberation comes
To the silk-embroidered land,
My dearest fatherland
Korea, cry out,
Long live independence!